

UC-NRLF



\$B 382 393

BERKELEY  
LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF  
CALIFORNIA

J. W. KOLOKMAN,   
 Hof-Buchhändler I. M. der   
 KAISERIN VON DEUTSCHLAND,   
 2, LANGHAM PLACE, LONDON, W.

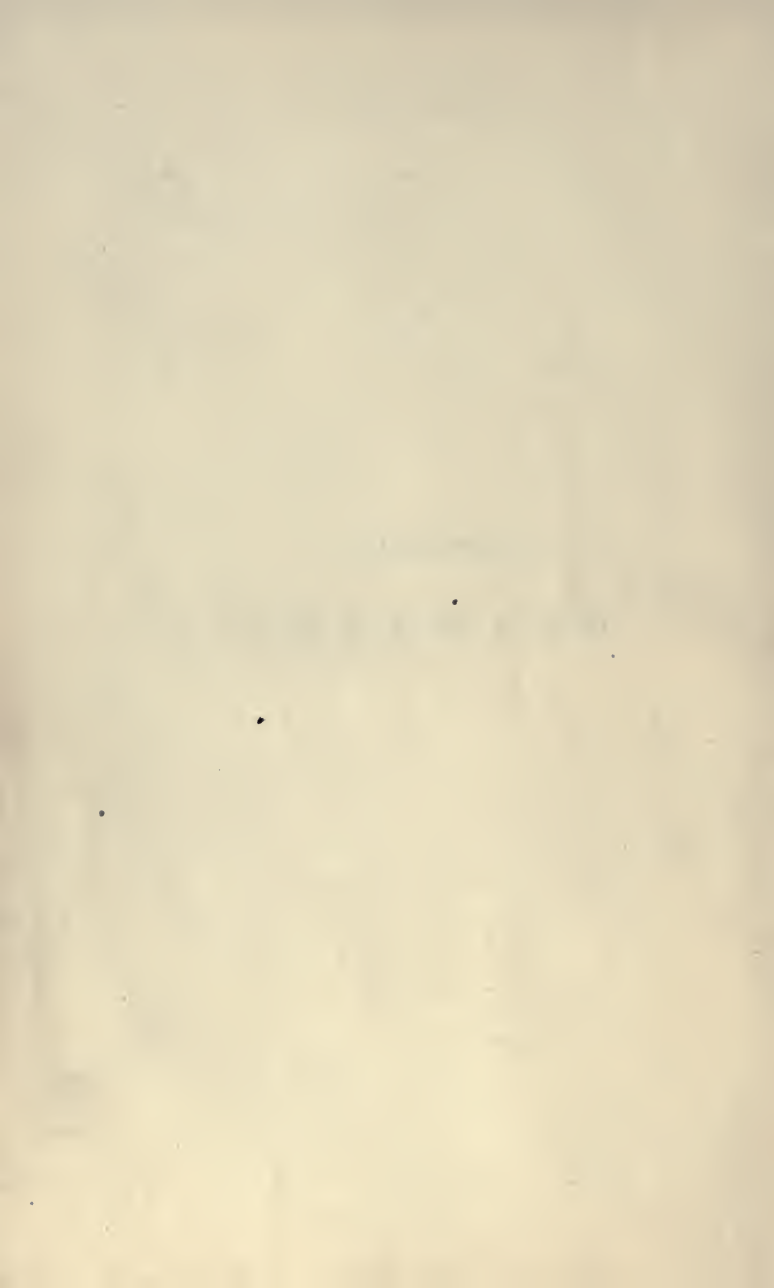


Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation



ENGLISH-RUSSIAN

G R A M M A R



62672

ENGLISH-RUSSIAN  
G R A M M A R  
OR  
PRINCIPLES

OF THE  
RUSSIAN LANGUAGE

FOR THE USE OF THE ENGLISH

with synoptical Tables for the Declensions and Conjugations, graduated  
Themes or Exercises for the application of the grammatical Rules,  
the correct Construction of these Exercises and the  
Accentuation of all the Russian words

BY  
CH. PH. REIFF

*Fourth Edition carefully revised*

PARIS  
MAISONNEUVE AND Co.

25, QUAI VOLTAIRE, 25

1883

PRESERVATION  
COPY ADDED  
ORIGINAL TO BE  
RETAINED

APR 21 1994

LEIPZIG.—PRINTED BY W. DRUGULIN, ORIENTAL AND OLD STYLE PRINTER.

PG 2111  
R 45  
1883  
MAN

## AUTHOR'S PREFACE

### TO THE THIRD EDITION

**T**HE first edition of this Grammar was published at St-Petersburg in 1821, in French, under the title of *Grammaire russe à l'usage des étrangers qui désirent connaître à fond les principes de cette langue*. Up to that period all the elementary books, relating to the study of the Russian language, had been formed on the model of the Latin, which, without any sufficient reason, had been considered the type, according to which all other tongues must be regulated. Since that time the works of the Russian grammarians GRETSCH and VOSTOKOF, the philological Researches of PAVSKY on the formation of the Russian language and the Essay on the comparative Grammar of the Russian language by DAVYDOF, and other works on the same subject, have solved many grammatical difficulties and definitely fixed the principles of the language.

The above works I have carefully consulted in writing the new edition of my *Russian Grammar*

*for the use of strangers.* This edition, completely remodelled, consists of two parts. The first is the Grammar properly so called, in which I have endeavoured to give the rules with a clearness and precision which may render their retention by the memory easy. The second part consists of *Themes* or graduated *Exercises* on each particular rule, where I have placed the Russian words below the English, to serve as vocabulary. The *solution* or *correct construction* of these Exercises will be found at the end of the Grammar.

In order to render the work as extensively useful as possible to foreigners, I have published it simultaneously in three languages, French, English and German. Philologists who may wish to see the subject treated more in detail, can consult my French translation of the Russian Grammar of Mr GRETSCH, under the title of *Grammaire raisonnée de la Langue russe, précédée d'une Introduction sur l'histoire de cet idiome, de son alphabet et de sa Grammaire*, and published at St-Petersburg in 1829.

CH. R.

*Carlsruhe, September 1862.*



## PUBLISHER'S NOTE

### TO THE FOURTH EDITION



**I**N the Fourth Edition of the English-Russian Grammar of the late CH. REIFF, which we now place before those who wish to acquire, by an easy way, a thorough knowledge of the principles of the Russian language, no changes and alterations have been made. There was no sufficient reason of modifying and remoulding a work, the practical character and admirable arrangement of which have been appreciated by more than one competent judge. The book thus being on the whole and in substance left in its original shape, particular attention could be given to the correctness of the edition both regarding typographical errors and the justness of language.—Great pains have also been taken to render the entrance of the study of Russian more accessive by adopting a phonetic method for the transcription of Russian words in English; in which regard the First Part of the grammar has undergone an entire renovation.

Mr. CHAMIZER-LENOIR, a linguist well-known by his deserving exertions in this province, has committed himself to the task; and this scholar did his best in preparing the work for the press, and in carefully revising the sheets as they passed through the same.

We hope that this handy and neat new edition of a book, which, in spite of some scientific shortcomings, "*has done and still can do real service*", will find the indulgence and patronage of the Public.

We feel at last much indebted to the Oriental Printing-Office of W. DRUGULIN for the excellent getting up and carrying through of this volume.

M. & Co.



# RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

## PART FIRST

### LEXICOLOGY.

- I.—THIS *Russian Grammar* is divided into four Division.  
parts, viz:
- I. *Lexicology* (словопроизведе́ние), or words considered as sounds of the human voice and as the elements of speech.
  - II. *Syntax* (словосочине́ние), or agreement and construction of words in sentences.
  - III. *Orthography* (правописа́ние), or the proper use of letters to represent words.
  - IV. *Prosody* (слоγοударе́ние), or *Orthoepy* (праворѣ́іе), i. e. the manner of uttering words with regard to their accentuation.

Sounds  
or Letters.

2.—It being the especial province of this science to explain every thing concerning the knowledge of words, it considers these first of all as mere sounds, and afterwards as the elements of speech. In respect then to mere sounds, words are composed of *letters* (бѹквы); and a collection of these letters or signs representing the particular sounds of which the words of a language are composed, is called *Alphabet* (азбука).

Alphabet.

3.—The Russian Alphabet now in use contains 36 letters, the roman and italic *types* of which, as used in printing, also the *caligraphic characters* or hand-writing, with their modern and ancient *appellation*, and their corresponding *value* of sound, are represented in the following table.

The Russian Alphabet is borrowed from the ecclesiastical Slavonic, which besides contains the following eight letters:





































Ѕ Ѹ Ѡ ѡ Ѣ Ѥ Ѧ ѧ

called        зѣло, укѣ, отѣ, юсѣ, ѡ, я, кси, пси for which now  
are substituted з, у, от, ю, о, я, кс, пс.

The letter ѡ has hitherto not been comprised among the number of the letters of the Alphabet; for which reason it is placed at the end of it.—Russian printers have for some time now pretty generally substituted the small capital т for the common ѡ, and this т we have made use of, both in this Grammar and in our Dictionary.

## RUSSIAN ALPHABET.

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.	
<i>roman.</i>	<i>italic.</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>ancient.</i>	<i>modern.</i>	<i>Proper sound.</i>	<i>Accidental sound.</i>
1. А а	<i>A a</i>	<i>А а</i>	<i>А а α</i>	азъ	а	а	е о ( <i>far</i> ) ( <i>met</i> ) ( <i>no</i> )
2. Б б	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	бўки	бе	б	р
3. В в	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	вѣди	ве	в	ф
4. Г г	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	глаго́ль	ге	g,gh;k,h,kh,v	
5. Д д	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	добро́	де	д	т
6. Е е	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е ѿ</i>	есть	е	ya, a ( <i>in yate,</i> <i>gate</i> )	yo, o ( <i>in yoke,</i> <i>no</i> )
7. Ж ж	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	живѣте	же	zsh	sh
8. З з	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	земля́	зе	z	s
9. И и	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и ѿ</i>	и́же	и	ee, i ( <i>in pin</i> ).	ye
10. І і	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	і́ ( <i>десятеричное</i> )		ee, i ( <i>in pin</i> )	
11. К к	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	ка́ко	ка	k	gh, kh
12. Л л	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	лю́ди	эль	l, ll	
13. М м	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	мыслѣте	эмъ	m	
14. Н н	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	нашъ	энъ	n	
15. О о	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	онъ	о	ō	a ( <i>in far</i> )
16. П п	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	поко́й	пе	p	
17. Р р	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	рцы	эръ	r	
18. С с	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	сло́во	эсъ	s, ss	z

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.	
<i>roman.</i>	<i>italic.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>ancient.</i>	<i>modern.</i>	<i>Proper sound.</i>	<i>Accidental sound.</i>
19. Т т	T t			твёрдо	те	t	d
20. У у	U u			у	у	oo, u	(in tub)
21. Ф ф	F f			фертъ	эфъ	f, ph	
22. Х х	X x			хѣръ	ха	kh, ch	
23. Ц ц	C c			цы	це	ts	
24. Ч ч	Ch ch			червь	че	ch, tsh	sh
25. Ш ш	Sh sh			ша		sh	
26. Щ щ	Shch shch			ща		sh-tsh	sh
27. Ъ ъ	Ъ ъ			ѣръ		e	<i>mute</i>
28. Ы ы	Ы ы			ѣры		e	<i>thick we</i>
29. Ь ѣ	Ь ѣ			ѣрь		y	<i>mute</i>
30. Ъ ѣ	Ъ ѣ			ять		yah, ā	yo
31. Э э	Э э			э		e	(in met)
32. Ю ю	Ю ю			ю		you	u <i>Fr.</i>
33. Я я	Я я			я		ya	ye, e (in yard) (in yet, met)
34. Ѳ Ѳ	Ѳ Ѳ			Ѳта		f	
35. Ѳ Ѳ	Ѳ Ѳ			Ѳжаца		ee, i	(in pin)
36. Ѳ Ѳ	Ѳ Ѳ			и съкраткой		y	<i>mute</i>

## RUSSIAN WRITTEN ALPHABET.

А. Аа М. м н. Ш. Шш  
 Ё. Ёё Ъ. Ъъ Н. н. Щ. Щш  
 В. Вв О. Оо Л. Лл  
 Т. Тт К. Кк П. Пп  
 Д. Дд Р. Рр Ы. Ыы  
 Е. Ее С. Сс Ъ. Ъъ  
 Ж. Жж М. Мм Э. Ээ  
 З. Зз У. Уу Ю. Юю  
 И. Ии Ф. Фф Я. Яя  
 Г. Гг Х. Хх О. Оо  
 К. Кк Ц. Цц Ч. Чч  
 Л. Лл Ъ. Ъъ Ы. Ыы

Языкъ Русскій, будучи управляемъ дарова-  
 =ниемъ и вкусомъ Писателя умнаго, мо-  
 жетъ равняться нынѣ въ силѣ красотѣ  
 и пріятности съ лучшими языками  
 древности и нашихъ временъ.



Division of  
the letters.

4.—The 36 letters of the Russian alphabet contain 12 *vowels* (гласныя), viz: а, е, и, і, о, у, ы, ѣ, э, ю, я, ѵ, of which the following five: е; ѣ, я, ю, ы, may be called *diphthongs* (двугласныя); 3 *semi-vowels* (полугласныя): ъ, ь, й, and 21 *consonants* (согласныя), viz: б, в, г, д, ж, з, к, л, м, н, п, р, с, т, ф, х, ц, ч, ш, щ, ѿ, ѱ.

5.—The vowels and semi-vowels, with regard to their sounds, are *hard*, *soft* or *moderate*; and the consonants, according to their degree of intensity, are *strong*, *feeble* or *liquid*, viz:

I. VOWELS.		III. CONSONANTS.	
I. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding:}		I. <i>Strong</i> : {and those corresponding:}	
2. <i>Soft</i> :		2. <i>Feeble</i> :	
а . . . . .	я	п . . . . .	б
э . . . . .	е	ф . . . . .	в
ы . . . . .	й, і	к . . . . .	г (g lat.)
о . . . . .	ѣ (іо)	х . . . . .	г (h lat.)
у . . . . .	ю	ш . . . . .	ж
3. <i>Moderate</i> :		т . . . . .	д
ѣ.		с . . . . .	з
II. SEMI-VOWELS.		ц (тс) . (дз)	These three have no sign of their own.
I. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding:}		ч (тш) . (дж)	
2. <i>Soft</i> :		щ (штш) (ждж)	
ѣ . . . . .	ѣ, й	3. <i>Liquid</i> .	
		л, м, н, р.	

6.—According to the particular organ of speech which gives utterance to the consonants, they are divided into:

1. *Gutturals* (гортанныя), pronounced in the throat:  
г, к, х.
2. *Palatals* (поднёбныя), uttered by the palate:  
л, н, р.
3. *Dentals* (зубныя), sounded by the aid of and against the teeth: д, т.

4. *Lingual* (язычная), articulated by means of applying the tongue closely to the upper teeth: ц.
5. *Labials* (губныя), produced between the lips: б, в, м, п, ф.
6. *Lispings* (шепелеватыя), produced by a whistling of the tongue against the palate: з, с.
7. *Hissings* (шипящія), sounded by a whistling of the tongue against the root of the lower teeth: ж, ч, ш, щ.

The vowel *у* and the consonant *ѳ* have not been included in the divisions, being found only in a few words taken from the Greek, and the former, with regard to pronunciation, being identical with *и*, and the latter with *ѱ*.

7.—In the foregoing table of the letters we have pointed out their *proper* and *accidental sounds*; the proper sound being the one they usually have, or when used separately, whereas they receive their accidental sound from a particular situation. This accidental sound, and more especially with regard to the vowels, depends upon the *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), of which more hereafter (§ 12).

Pronunciation of the letters.

The rules we are about to give of the pronunciation of the Russian letters, are taken from the dialect of Great-Russia, such as it is spoken at the Court, among the polished and literary world. Other dialects of the Russian tongue are those of Little-Russia, White-Russia, Novgorod, Soozdal and that of Olonetz; all of which however differ not more materially from the Moscovite dialect, than by their pronunciation and the use of some particular expressions.

8.—The vowels, in the Russian language, are differently pronounced according to the place they occupy in a word, or as they are accented or not.

Vowels.

А, а.	Proper sound,	{ a (in <i>far</i> ): áзбука, <i>alphabet</i> ; кáша, <i>oat-meal</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ e (in <i>pen</i> ): ўжасъ, <i>dread</i> ; часы, <i>watch</i> ; лóшадь, <i>horse</i> . o (in <i>go</i> ): большáго, <i>great</i> ; ху- дáго, <i>bad</i> .

This vowel *a* is pronounced as *ah* or *a* (in *fat*); but: 1) It has the sound of short *e* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) in the middle of a word, when not accented; at the end of words however, whether accented or not, it retains its proper sound.—2) In the termination *aro* of the genitive of adjectives, when accented, it has the sound of long *o*. Thus the above words are pronounced: àhzbooka, kàhsha, oòzshess, tshesseè, lòhshad, bahlshòhva, khudòhva.

Я, я.	Proper sound,	{ ya (in <i>yard</i> ): я́ма, <i>ditch</i> : мя́со, <i>meat</i> ; земл́я, <i>earth</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ ye, e (in <i>yet</i> ): ядрó, <i>kernel</i> ; де- вать, <i>nine</i> .

The vowel *я*, when accented, has the sound of the diphthong *yah* (*yàhma*, *myàhso*, *zèmyah*); but if not accented, it is pronounced *ye* (in *yap*) at the beginning of words and syllables, and *e* (in *get*) after a consonant (*yadrò*, *dàvet*). At the end of words, whether accented or not, it preserves its proper sound; thus зар́я, *dawn*; вре́мя, *time*, are pronounced zaryàh, vraìmyah. The pronoun ея́, *of her*, is pronounced yayòh, and the syllable ся of pronominal verbs is pronounced sah as: старáться, *to exert one's self* (stahràhtsah).

Е, е.	Proper sound,	{ ya, a (in <i>yate, gate</i> ) еди́нь, <i>one</i> ; сié, <i>this</i> ; сёрдце, <i>heart</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ yo, o (in <i>yoke</i> ): берёза, <i>birch-tree</i> ; жёлтый, <i>yellow</i> .



At the beginning of words and syllables the vowel *e* is pronounced *yai*, but after a consonant purely as long *a* or short *e*; the above words therefore are pronounced *yaidèèn*, *seeyaie*, *sàirtse*. This vowel, when accented, sounds like *yo* (in *yoke*), or, after a hissing and the lingual consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), like *oh* in the following cases, viz: 1) when standing before a consonant followed by one of the hard vowels, *a*, *o*, *y*, *ы*, *ѣ*; 2) at the end of words; 3) in the termination *ею* or *еѹ* of the instrumental singular case of feminine nouns; 4) before the gutturals (г, к, х) or the simple hissing sounds (ж, ш), which do not allow of a hard vowel after them; 5) in the present tense of verbs, although followed by a soft vowel. Thus the words *ѣлка*, *fir*; *слѣзы*, *tears*; *ледъ*, *ice*; *жизнь*, *life*; *моё*, *my*; *землёю*, *by the earth*; *далѣкій*, *distant*; *несёшь*, *thou carriest*; *несёте*, *you carry*; *шелкъ*, *silk*; *лице*, *face*; *душёю*, *with the soul*, are pronounced *yòlka*, *shyòzee*, *lyot*, *zsheetyò*, *mah-yò*, *zamylyòyou*, *dalyòkee*, *nessyòsh*, *nessyòtai*, *shòlk*, *leetsò*, *dooshòyou*. It is this pronunciation *yo* or *o* that it is customary now to point out by a diæresis over the vowel *e*; *берѣза*, *жёлтый*, *ѣлка*, &c., and in this manner it has been distinguished, throughout this Grammar. This vowel *ë* serves besides to give the French pronunciation of *eu*, as in *Монтеस्कѣ* (*Fr. Montesquieu*).

Ѣ, ѣ.	{	Proper sound,	{	ya, a (in <i>yate</i> , <i>gate</i> ): ѢМЪ, <i>I eat</i> ; вѢра, <i>faith</i> .
		Accidental sound,	{	yo (in <i>yoke</i> ): ГНѢзда, <i>nests</i> ; звѢзды, stars.

This vowel *ѣ* at the beginning of words and syllables sounds like *yai*; but after a consonant like long *a* or short *e* (*yaim*, *vàira*). However after the consonant *н*

the diphthongal sound is felt rather stronger; thus нѣтъ, *no*; нѣмóй, *dumb*, are pronounced *nyet*, *nyamòy*. When accented, this vowel has the sound of *yoh* only in the words гнѣзда, *nests*; звѣзды, *stars*; сѣдла, *saddles*; цвѣлъ, *he flourished*; обрѣлъ, *he found*; also in their derivatives and compounds, as: звѣздочка, *little star*; гнѣздышко, *little nest*; разцвѣлъ, *it bloomed*; which are pronounced *gnyòzhzda*, *zvyòhzdee*, *syòhdla*, *tsvyòll*, *ahbryòll*, *zvyòhzdotshka*, *gnyòhzdishko*, *rahztsvyòll*.

О, о. { Proper sound, о: дóма, *at home*; пóслъ, *after*.  
Accidental sound, ah: хорошó, *well*; колоколá, *bells*.

The vowel *o*, when accented, keeps its proper sound; but if unaccented, it takes the sound of *ah*; wherefore the above words are pronounced *dòma*, *pòslai*, *kharahshòh*, *kalakalàh*. It must be observed however, that after an accented syllable, the sound of that vowel is extremely short; thus the word кóлоколъ, *bell*, is pronounced *kòhlokol* or *kòhl'k'l*.

И, и. { Proper sound, ee: иттí, *to go*; миръ, *peace*.  
Accidental sound, yee: имъ, *to them*; статýй, *articles*.

The vowel *u*, at the beginning of the various inflections of the pronoun of the third person (имъ, ихъ, íмш), and after the semi-vowel *ь*, is pronounced as a diphthong, *yeem*, *yeèmee*, *yeekh*, *stahtyeè*. But in every other instance it preserves its proper sound, only that after a preposition terminating with the semi-vowel *ъ*, it takes the thick sound of *ы*, thus the words въ избѣ, *in the room*; съ Иваномъ, *with John*; предъидúщíй, *precedent*, are pronounced as if written *вызбѣ*, *сывáномъ*, *предыдúщíй*.

Ы, ы. { Proper sound, e thick: сынъ, *son*; льстецы́, *flatterers*.  
Accidental sound, we: грибý, *mushrooms*; мы, *we*.

The sound of this vowel *u* is a thick utterance of *e*, and to get any thing like a perfect idea of this sound, it is necessary to hear it from the mouth of a Russian. After the labials (б, в, м, п, ф) it sounds very nearly like *we* pronounced very short; thus the words грибы, *mushrooms*; вы, *you*; мы, *we*; снопы, *sheaves*; шкафы, *cupboards*, are pronounced *grebwè, vwe, mwe, snapwè, sh'kafwè*. The Polish language represents this sound by the letter *y*.

Ю, ю. { Proper sound, you, long *u*: югъ, *south*; люблю, *I love*.  
 { Accidental sound, *u* French: Брюссель, *Brussels*.

This vowel *ю* has properly the diphthongal sound *you* or long *u*; wherefore the pronunciation of the above words is *youk, lyoublyou*. In foreign words only it takes the place of the French *u*, as in the word Брюссель, *Brussels* (Fr. *Bruxelles*.)

И, и, У, у, Э, э, В, в.—These four vowels, whether accented or not, always keep their proper sound, as in the words иерей, *priest*; миръ, *the world*; ужинъ, *supper*; пагуба, *loss*; этоъ, *this*; мѣро, *holy chrism*, which are pronounced *yerèy, meer, oòzsheen, pàhgoobah, àttot, mèro*. For the use of *i* and *v* (instead of *u*) see Orthography.

9.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ъ, ѣ), which are placed, Semi-vowels. the two first after the consonants, and the last after the vowels, are only half uttered vowels, *э* being half of the vowel *o*, and *ѣ* or *ѣ* half of the vowel *u*.

Ѣ, Ѣ, Ъ, Ъ.—The hard semi-vowel *э* entails on the consonant that precedes it, a strong and harsh sound, as though that letter was double, and has even the effect of causing a feeble consonant to be pronounced like its strong corresponding sound;

thus the words: станъ, *shape*; вязъ, *elm-tree*; шестъ, *perch*; кровъ, *roof*; столъ, *table*; братъ, *brother*; пылъ, *flame*; гусáръ, *hussar*; объ, *from*; гладъ, *hunger*; семъ, *this*; цѣпъ, *flail*, are pronounced *stann*, *vyass*, *shesst*, *krohff*, *stoll*, *brahtt*, *peel*, *goosàrr*, *ohpp*, *glahtt*, *semm*, *tsepp*. On the other hand, the soft semi-vowel *ь* confers a liquifying (*Fr. mouillé*) and slender sound on the preceding consonant; thus the words: станъ, *become*, вязъ, *marsh*; шестъ, *six*; кровъ, *blood*; столъ, *so much*; братъ, *to take*; пылъ, *dust*; гусáръ, *goose-herd*; Объ, *the Obi*; гладъ, *smoth road*; семъ, *seven*; цѣпъ, *chain*, are pronounced *stahn'* (like *gn* in the French *Allemagne*), *vyazi'*, *shessti'*, *krovi'*, *stohl'i*, *brahti'*, *peeli'*, *goosàri'*, *ohbi'*, *glàdi'*, *semi'*, *tsepi'*, by causing the *i* to be slightly vibrated and to expire, as it were, within the mouth; the sound and the mechanism for producing it, being closely allied to what is heard in the French words *péril*, *soleil*, *campagne*, *cigogne*, *ligne*. After the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) the sounds of the semi-vowels *ъ* and *ь* are the same and differ in nothing from each other; thus the words ножъ, *knife*, and рожъ, *rye*; мечъ, *sword*, and сѣчь, *to cut*; камышъ, *reed*, and мышь, *mouse*; тощъ, *fasting*, and ночь, *night*, are pronounced *nohsh* and *rohsh*, *metch* and *setch*, *kahmeesh* and *meesh*, *tohsh'tsh* and *nohsh'tsh*.

Й, ѣ.—The soft semi-vowel *й* is pronounced very rapidly and short along with the vowel that precedes it, and with which it formes but one syllable; thus the words дай, *give*; пей, *drink*: мой, *my*; жуй, *chew*; вѣй, *blow*; капиі, *brownbay*, are pro-



nounced *da<sup>i</sup>*, or like *di* in *die*, *pe<sup>i</sup>*, *mo<sup>i</sup>*, *zshu<sup>i</sup>*, *va<sup>i</sup>*, *karee<sup>i</sup>*, givin gutterance to a short *ĩ* after the vowel.

10.—The consonants, in the Russian language, Consonants. as will be seen below, have also various sounds, viz:

Б, б.	} Proper sound,	{	<i>b</i> : баба, <i>old woman</i> ; бобъ, <i>bean</i> ; бабка, <i>cockle</i> .
В, в.			<i>v</i> : вонъ, <i>away</i> ; ровъ, <i>ditch</i> ; вторникъ, <i>Tuesday</i> .
Д, д.			<i>d</i> : дно, <i>bottom</i> ; родъ, <i>kind</i> ; водка, <i>brandy</i> .
Ж, ж.			<i>zsh</i> : жду, <i>I wait</i> ; мужъ, <i>husband</i> ; ложка, <i>spoon</i> .
З, з.			<i>s</i> : звонъ, <i>sound</i> ; глазъ, <i>eye</i> ; сказка, <i>story</i> .

The feeble consonants б, в, д, ж, з, retain their proper sound before the vowels, before the liquid and other feeble consonants, observing that ж (French *j*) is now represented in English by *zsh*. But before the strong consonants and at the end of words terminating in the hard semi-vowel (ъ), they assume the utterance of their corresponding strong letters (п, ф, т, ш, с). Thus the above words are pronounced *bàbah*, *bohph*, *bàpka*, *vohhh*, *rohff*, *ftòhrneek*, *dno*, *rott*, *vòhtkah*, *zsh'doo*, *moosh*, *òhshkah*, *zvonn*, *glahss*, *skàska*. In words where зð is followed by н, the letter ð is silent: thus.пóздно, *late*; прáздникъ, *feast*, are pronounced *pòhzno*, *pràhzneek*. The word дóждикъ, *rain*, is pronounced *dòhzsh'zsheek*.

Г, г.	{	Proper sound, <i>g gh</i> : горá, <i>mountain</i> ; погибелъ, <i>perdition</i> .	
		Accidental sound, {	<i>k</i> : другъ, <i>friend</i> ; мóгшій, <i>who could</i> .
			<i>h</i> : Госпóдь, <i>Lord</i> ; Бóга, <i>of God</i> .
			<i>kh</i> , <i>ch</i> : Богъ, <i>God</i> ; лéгкий, <i>light</i> .
			<i>v</i> : крáснаго, <i>red</i> ; егó, <i>of him</i> .

In the beginning and in the middle of words the consonant *z* preserves its proper sound, being articulated with a slight vocalized aspiration, something like the Hibernian *g* when pronounced hard (*gharàh*,

*pahgheèbel*). The accidental sound takes place in the following cases: 1) At the end of words and before the consonant *ш*, it takes the hard utterance of *к* (*drook, mòhkshe*).—In the words Госпóдь, *Lord*; блага, *well*, and the various inflections of the noun Богъ, *God* (Бóга, Бóгу, Бóгомъ) it is an aspirated (*hospòhd, blàho, bòhhah, bòhhoo, bòhhomh*).—3) In the words Богъ, *God*, and убóгъ, *poor*; before a strong consonant, as лёгкiй, *light*; лёгче, *lighter*; нóгти, *the nails*, and in the foreign words ending in *пз*, as Петербóургъ, *Petersburg*; Кенигсбérгъ, *Königsberg*, it takes the hard guttural sound of *x* (Germ. *ch, boch, oobòch, lyòchkee, laich̃tshai, nòch̃tee, paiterboòrch, kainigsbèrch*).—4) In inflections аго, яго, ого, его, of adjectives and pronouns, it is pronounced as *v* (*kràsnahevah, yaivòh*).—5) In words derived from foreign languages, it is pronounced either *g* or aspirated *h*, according to the original sound which it is intended to supply, as in the words геогр́афiя, *geography*; губ́ернiя, *government*; геро́й, *hero*; госпи́таль, *hospital*.

К, к.	{	Proper sound, <i>k</i> : крестъ, <i>cross</i> ; зéркало, <i>mirror</i> .
		Accidental sound, { <i>gh</i> : къ Бóгу, <i>to God</i> ; къ землѣ, <i>to the earth</i> . <i>kh, ch</i> : кто, <i>who</i> ; къ кому́, <i>to whom</i> .

The consonant *к* when placed before the feeble consonants б, г, д, ж, з, takes the sound of its corresponding feeble *z* (*gh' bòhoo, gh' zai'mlai*), and before the consonants к, т, ч, it takes the articulation of *x* (*kh̃to, kh̃kahmò*). In every other instance it preserves its proper sound (*kresst, zai'rkahlo*).



The compound consonant *ш* (штш), which has the three distinct sounds of *sh-t-sh* or *s-t-sh*, and which the Poles represent by *szcz*, has the simple sound of *ш* before the consonant *н*; the above words consequently are pronounced *sh'tshitt*, or *stchitt*, *òhvosh'tsh*, and *ahvahshnòy*, *pahmòhshnik*.

П, п.	}	. . . . .	{	р: павлѣнъ, <i>pea-cock</i> ; столпъ, <i>column</i> .
Ф, ф.				f or ph: фонарь, <i>lantern</i> ; скуфья, <i>scull-cap</i> .
Х, х.	}	. . . . .	{	kh, Germ. ch: храмъ, <i>temple</i> ; духъ, <i>odour</i> .
Ш, ш.				sh, Fr. ch, Germ. sch, Pol. sz: шалашъ, <i>cottage</i> .
Ц, ц.	}	. . . . .	{	ts, Germ. z: царь, <i>king</i> ; перецъ, <i>pepper</i> .
Ө, о.				f: театръ, <i>theatre</i> ; Аѳѣны, <i>Athens</i> .

Thesesix strong consonants keep their proper sound, and consequently the above words are pronounced *pa-vleèn*, *stohlþ*, *fahnàr*, *schoofyà*, *khrahmm*, *dookh*, *shah-làsh*, *tsar*, *pàhrets*, *fe-àht'r*, *afeènee*, observing that *x* is pronounced as in the Scotch *loch* or German *Dach*. For the use of the consonant *ө*, which is pronounced the same as *ф*, see Orthography.

Л, л.	}	. . . . .	{	l: ладъ, <i>accord</i> ; лядъ, <i>ill-luck</i> .
М, м.				m: всемъ, <i>to all</i> ; восемь, <i>eight</i> .
Н, н.	}	. . . . .	{	n: тронъ, <i>throne</i> ; тронъ, <i>touch</i> .
Р, р.				r: радъ, <i>glad</i> ; рядъ, <i>rank</i> .

The liquid consonants preserve their proper sound, being strong or soft in their utterance according to the vowel or semi-vowel that follows; consequently the above words are pronounced *latt* and *lyat*, *vsaimm* and *vòhsem*; *trohnn* and *tron'i*; *rahтт* and *ryahтт*. It is necessary to observe here that the Russian consonant *л*, before the hard vowels and strong con-



sonants, by no means resembles the usual English *l*, in as much as in that situation it is pronounced with much greater force, and which is obtained by a strong pressure of the tongue against the upper teeth. The Poles represent this sound by *l* with a bar (*ł*). The other three sounds correspond with those of the English language, only that the *p* has a stronger trill, partaking more of the Irish utterance of this letter.

11.—A vowel, either by itself, or joined to one or more consonants, with or without a semi-vowel, forms, in the Russian language, a *syllable* (слогъ, складъ); and one or several of these, used to represent a thought or sensation, form a word (слово). Words consequently may be *monosyllables* (одно-сло́жныя) or *polysyllables* (многосло́жныя), according to their being compounded of one or more syllables, as: *н*, *and*; *я*, *I*; *онъ*, *he*; *ай*, *ah*; *сей*, *this*; *два*, *two*; *страхъ*, *fright*; *зи-ма́*, *winter*; *до-ро́-га*, *road*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель*, *virtue*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель-ный*, *virtuous*, &c.

The Russian language contains a few words that have no vowel at all, or whose vowel has changed into a semi-vowel; such are the particles *въ*, *къ*, *съ*, *бъ*, *жъ*, *ль* (instead of *во*, *ко*, *со*, *бы*, *же*, *ли*). These words, called *assyllabics* (безсло́жныя), are joined to the syllables of the preceding or following word, as: *въ домъ*, *in the house*; *къ окнѣ*, *towards the window*; *съ тобою*, *with thee*; *если бѣ*, *if*; *одна́ко жѣ*, *however*; *то́чно ль*, *is it right so?*

12.—In polysyllabic words there is always one syllable that experiences a greater stress of the voice than the rest; thus in the words *мáло*, *little*; *го-то́во*, *ready*; *говори́те*, *speak*, the syllables *ма*, *то*, *пи*, are more discernably audible than the syllables

Syllables  
and words.

Tonic  
accent.

10, 20, 60, *me*. This modification of the voice is in fact what is meant by *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), and is indicated by a little mark over the vowel. The accented syllable is called *long* (дóлгий), the others *short* (кράткіе).

The accent is no longer printed in Russian books, except to distinguish some homonymous words and grammatical inflections of similar forms, as зАМОКЪ, *castle*, and замОКЪ, *lock*; слОва, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and слОва́, *words* (nomin. plur.), as will be seen in Part IV, Prosody. It is here the place to observe that in the Russian language there is no rule by which to determine the accent, and that in one and the same word it is frequently shifted from one syllable to another; for which reason all the words used in this Grammar are printed with the accent they ought to have.

The following *Reading-exercise*, in which the reading of the Russian text is facilitated by an imitation of the sounds according to English utterance, and an interlinear literal translation added, it is confidentially hoped, will materially assist the learner to make himself master of the rules we have given on the pronunciation of the letters and words of the Russian language.

### READING-EXERCISE.

Вчерá	въ	шесть	часóвъ	ýтра	по́ехали	мы
Ftsherà	f'	shest	tshessòff	oòtra	pah-yaikhalee	mwe
Yesterday	at	six	o'clock	of the morning	went	we

верхóмъ	въ	Пóтсдамъ.	Ничегó	нѣтъ	скучнѣе	этой
verkhòmm	f'	Pòtsdam.	Neetshaivò	nyet	scooshnaiyai	aitoy
on horseback	to	Potsdam.	Nothing	there is	duller	than this

дорóги:	вездѣ	глубóкій	песóкъ,	и	ни	какіхъ	занимáтель-
dahròghee:	vezdai	gloobòhkee	pessòk,	ee	neekahkeekh	zaneemàhtel-	
road:	every where	a deep	sand,	and not	any	interest-	

ныхъ	предмѣтовъ	въ	глазá	не	попада́ется.	Но	видѣ
neekh	praidmàtoff	v'	glahzàh	'nai	pahpahdàyetsah.	No	veet
ing	object	to	the eyes	not	presents itself.	But	the sight

Потсдама, а особливо Санъ-Суси, очень хорошъ. Мы  
 Pòtsdahmah, ah ahsahbleëvo San-Soosée, òtshain kharòsh. Mwe  
*of Potsdam, and above all of Sans-Souci, (is) very fine. We*

остановились въ трактиръ, не дожда́я до городскихъ воротъ.  
 ahstahnahveëles f' trakteërai, nai da-yaizsh 'zshàyah da garadskeèkh vahròt.  
*stopped at the hotel, not arriving to the city-gates.*

Отдохну́въ и заказавъ обѣдъ, мы пошли въ  
 Addakhnoòv ee zakazàhv ahbyald, mwe pashlèè v'  
*Having rested ourselves and ordered a dinner, we went into*

городъ. У воротъ записали наши имена. На парадномъ  
 gòrot. oo varòt zahpeesàhlee nàshee eemainàh. Nah paràhndnom  
*the town. At the gates one wrote our names. On the parade-*

мѣстѣ противъ дворца, училась гвардія: прекрасные  
 maistai pròhteef dvahrtsàh, ootsheèlahs gvàhrdyah: praikràhsneeyai  
*place opposite the palace, exercised the guards: very fine*

люди, прекрасные мундиры! Видъ дворца со  
 lyòudee, praikràhsneeyai moondeëree! Veed dvahrtsàh sah  
*men, superb uniforms! The sight of the palace from*

стороны са́да очень хорошъ. Городъ, вообще  
 starahneè sàhda òtshain kharòsh. Ghòrod vah-ahbstshai  
*the side of the garden (is) very fine. The town in general*

прекрасно выстроены; въ большо́й у́лицѣ мно́го  
 praikràhsno vwèstroyain; v' bahlshòy oòleetsai mnògo  
*(is) well built; in the great street (there are) many*

великоле́пныхъ домо́въ, стро́енныхъ отча́сти по образцу  
 vaileekahlaipneekh dahmòf, stròyainneekh attshàhstee pah ahbrahtsoò  
*of magnificent houses, built partly on the model*

огро́мнѣйшихъ римскихъ пала́тъ и на со́бственныя де́ньги  
 agròmnaysheekh reèmskeekh pahlàht ee na sòbstvainneeyah dèynghee  
*of the vastest Roman palaces and at the own expences*

поко́йнаго коро́ля: онъ да́рилъ ихъ, кому́ хоте́ль. Тепе́рь  
 pakòynahvah kahralyàh: on dareèl yeeekh, kamoò khahtall. Taipèr  
*of the late king: he gave them, to whom he chose. Now*

сѣи огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются  
seeeyè agròmneeyah zdáhneeyah poòstee, eelee zaneemàhyootsah  
*the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied*

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамъ есть русская церковь подъ  
sahldàhtamee. — F' Pòtsdahmai yest roòskayah tsairkov pahd  
*by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under*

надзира́ніемъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живётъ  
nahdzeeráhneeyem stàrahvah roòskahvah sahldàtah, kahtòree zsheev'yòtt  
*the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives*

тамъ со времёнъ царствованія Императрицы Анны. Мы  
tahm sah vraimain tsàrstvovaneeyah eemperatreètsee àhnnee. Mwe  
*there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We*

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ  
nahseèloo maghleè seeskàht yaivò. Dr'yàkhlee stahreèk  
*with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man*

сидѣлъ на большихъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что  
seedail na bahlsheèkh krèslakhk, ee oosleèshahv shto  
*was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that*

мы Русскіе, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и  
mwe roòskeeyai, prahtyahnoòl k' nahm roòkee, ee  
*we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and*

*first*  
дрожащимъ голосомъ сказалъ: Слава Бѣгу! Слава Бѣгу!  
drazhshàtsheem gölossom skahzàhl: slàvah Bòhoo! slàvah Bòhoo!  
*with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!*

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы  
ohn khahtail gahvahreèt spervàh s' nàhmee pah-roòsskee: no mwe  
*He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we*

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало  
s' troodòm mahgleè rahzoomait droog droògah. Nam nahdlaizshàhlo  
*with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged*

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь  
pahvtahryàht pahtshtèè kàzshdoyai slòvo. „Pie-dyòmtai f' tsairkov  
*to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church*



Божію, сказáлъ онъ, и помóлимся вмѣстѣ, хотя нынѣ  
 Bòzsheeyou, skahzàhl on, ee pahmòhleemsa vmaistai, khahtyàh neènai  
*of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day*

и нѣтъ <sup>gen</sup> прázдника.“ Сѣрдце моѣ напóлнилось  
 ee n'yet prázneekah.“ Sairtse mah-yòh napòhlnelos  
*even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself*

благóговѣніемъ, когдá отворíлась дверь въ цѣрковь,  
 blahhaghavaineeyam, kaghdà ahtvareèlas dvair f' tsairkov,  
*with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,*

гдѣ стóлько врѣмени цáрствуетъ глубóкое молчáніе,  
 ghdyai stòlko vraimainee tsàrstvooyet gloobókoyai mahltshàneeyai,  
*where so much of time reigns a profound silence,*

едвá перерывáемое слáбыми вздóхами и тѣхнмъ гóлосомъ  
 yaidvàh perereevâyaimoyai slàhbemee vzdòkhkhammee ee teèkheem ghòlossom  
*hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice*

стáрца, котóрый по воскресѣнъямъ прихóдитъ тудá читáть  
 stàrtsah, kahtòhree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhòhdeet toodàh tsheetàht  
*of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read*

святѣйшую изъ книгъ, приготóвляющую егó къ  
 svyàhtèyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyâyoustshooyou yaivòh k'  
*the most holy of the books, preparing him to*

блaжénной вѣчнóсти. Въ цѣрквѣ всѣ чистó. Цѣркóвныя  
 blahzshainnoy vaitshnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheesto. Tsairkòvneeyah  
*the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-*

кнѣги и ўтварь храня́тся въ сундукѣ. Отъ врѣмени до  
 kneèghee ee oòtvahr khrahnyàtsah f' soondookai. Aht vraimenee doh  
*books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to*

врѣмени старѣ́къ перебирáетъ ихъ съ молѣтвóю. „Чáсто  
 vraimainee stahreèk perebeerâyait yeekh s' mahleètvooyou. „Tshàsto  
*time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often*

отъ всегó сѣрдца, сказáлъ онъ, сокрушáюся я о томъ, что  
 aht fsaivò sairtsah, skahzàhl on, sahkreoshàyouy yah ah tomm, shto  
*from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that*

по смѣрти моѣй, котóрая отъ меня конѣчно ужé не  
 pah smairtee mah-yèy, kahtórayah aht mainyàh kahnaishno oozshai nai  
*after death my, which from me certainly already not (is)*

далёко, нé кому бóдетъ смотрѣть за цѣрковью.“ — Съ  
 dahlyòhko, nai kahmoo boòdait smahtrait zah tsairkovyou.“ — S'  
*far, no person will watch over the church.“ — During*

полчасá прóбыли мы въ семъ свящённомъ мѣстѣ,  
 poltshahsà pròbwelee mwe f' saim svyahststshainnom maistai,  
*half an hour remained we in this holy spot,*

простѣлись съ почтѣннымъ старикóмъ, и пожела́ли ему́  
 prahsteèles s' pahsthtainneem stahreekòm, ee pahzshailàlee yaimòò  
*bade farewell with the venerable old man, and wished him*

тѣхой смѣрти.  
 tèekhoy smairtee.  
*an easy death.*

Карамзѣнъ.  
 Kahrahmzeèn.

Elements  
 of speech.

13.—Words, when considered as the elements of speech, are either *denominative* (знаменáтельные) or *auxiliary* (служебныя). The former express the idea of objects, of their qualities or actions; the latter merely design the connexion that exists among the denominative words; thus in this phrase: Птѣцы летáютъ по вóздуху, а рýбы живýтъ въ водѣ, *birds fly in the air, and fishes live in water*, the denominative words are: *птѣцы, летáютъ, вóздуху, рýбы, живýтъ, водѣ*, and the auxiliary words are: *по, а, въ*. The former are called the *parts* (ча́сти), and the latter the *particles of speech* (части́цы рѣчи). The parts and particles of speech, in the Russian language, may be brought under nine different heads; namely:

## I. PARTS OF SPEECH:

1. The *substantive* (имя существительное).
2. The *adjective* (имя прилагательное).
3. The *pronoun* (мѣстоимѣніе).
4. The *verb* (глаголь).
5. The *participle* (прича́стіе).
6. The *adverb* (нарѣчіе) and the *gerund* (дѣеприча́стіе).

## II. PARTICLES OF SPEECH:

7. The *preposition* (предло́гъ).
8. The *conjunction* (сою́зъ).
9. The *interjection* (междомѣтіе).

Certain languages, such as the French, German, English and others, make use of a distinctive word before a common noun, whenever employed in speech, unless the same be sufficiently determined by the accompanying word; thus the French say: *le chapeau, la plume*; the German: *der Hut, die Feder*, and the English: *the hat, the pen*. If the common noun, however, be taken in an indeterminate sense, it is then preceded by another word; as: *un chapeau, une plume*; *ein Hut, eine Feder*; *a hat, a pen*. This kind of word is called *article* (членъ), and distinguished in those tongues by the *definite* and *indefinite* article. In French the articles are: *le, la, les*, and *un, une, des*; in German: *der, die, das, die*, and *ein, eine*; in English: *the* and *a* or *an*. The Russian language has no articles, it being left to the sense of the sentence to indicate whether the common noun is taken in a determinate or indeterminate sense. This deficiency is sometimes also supplied by other words, such as *тотъ, this*, to indicate a determinate, and *нѣкоторый, certain*, to indicate an indeterminate sense; as: *Тотъ человекъ, о которомъ вы говорите, пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, the man of whom you speak, is come to me; нѣкоторый человекъ пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, a man is come to me.*

14.—All words, whether parts of speech or particles, are either *primitive* or *derivative*, *simple* or *compound*. The *primitives* (первообразныя) are such

Division  
of words.

as are not formed from other words; e. g. садъ, *garden*; жена́, *woman*; бѣлый, *white*; жить, *to live*. The *derivatives* (производныя) are such as are formed from words already existing in the language, e. g. садовникъ, *gardener*; жѣнскій, *womanly*; бѣлизна, *whiteness*; пережить, *to over-live*. *Compounds* (сложныя) are formed of two denominative words; e. g. садоводство, *horticulture*, from садъ, *garden* (lat. *hortus*), and водить, *cultivate*; трудолюбіе, *love of work*, from трудъ, *work*, and любить, *to love*. All other words, whether primitive or derivative, are *simple* (простыя).

Roots  
of words.

15.—Every word, whether primitive or derivative, simple or compound, is formed from *roots* (корни), or from radical syllables and letters, which become words by the junction of other roots. Thus in the words: зрю, *I see*; зрѣніе, *the sight*; зрѣмый, *visible*; зоркій, *sharp-sighted*; обозрѣть, *to examine*, the root is the syllable зор or the mixed consonant зр, which becomes significant by the addition of the syllables ю, ніе, имый, кій, обо, &c.—The roots may be divided into *principal* and *secondary*.

1) The *principal* roots (главные) are such as serve to form denominative words, or parts of speech; such are the roots вид, ок, рук, whence the words видѣ, *sight*; око, *eye*; рука́, *hand*, are formed. 2) The *secondary* roots (прида́точные) are those from which, in the first place, auxiliary words or particles are formed, e. g. изъ, *of*; въ, *in*; съ, *with*; and which afterwards serve to form words by being united with the principal roots; e. g. видный, *visible*; очкі, *spectacles*; поручить, *to commit*. Thus the secondary roots



are: *a) initial* (предыдущіе), placed at the beginning of words, and called *prefixes* or *prepositions*, e. g. у-ходъ, *departure*; от-казъ, *refusal*; and *b) final* (послѣдующіе), which form the terminations of words, and are called *suffixes*, e. g. вод-а, *water*; зем-ля, *earth*; крас-ный, *red*; дѣл-амъ, *to do*.

In order to trace Russian words properly so called, that is to say Slavonian words, to their roots, the learner will do well to proceed in the following manner. Let us take as examples the words преизбыточествовать, *to superabound*, and засвидѣтельствова́ніе, *attestation*. After taking away the initial secondary roots *пре* and *за*, and the finals *вать* and *ваніе*, there remain the words избыточество, *abundance*, and свидѣтельство, *testimony*, which are derived from избытокъ, *superfluity*, and свидѣтель (in Slavonian *свѣдѣтель*), *witness*. These last mentioned are themselves derived from избыть, *to abound*, and свѣдѣть, *to know*; words which are formed of the prepositions *изъ* and *сѣ*, joined to the simple verbs быть, *to be*, and вѣдѣть or вѣдать, *to know*, from whence if we take away the terminations of the infinitive, there remain *бы* and *вѣд*. We thus see the root of the word преизбыточествовать is **БЫ**; the steps of its formation being apparent: быть, избыть, избытокъ, избыточество, избыточествовать, преизбыточествовать; the word засвидѣтельствова́ніе has **ВѢД** for its root, whence are derived: вѣдѣть or вѣдать, свѣдѣть, свѣдѣтель (in Russian *свидѣтель*), свидѣтельство, свидѣтельствова́ть, засвидѣтельствова́ть, засвидѣтельствова́ніе.

Every Russian word of Slavonian origin may be submitted to the same process of dissection, and the learner will find the following words appropriate as an exercise: независимость, *independence*; неизмѣримый, *immensurable*; председа́тельствова́ть, *to preside*; сострада́ніе, *compassion*; изобре́тательность, *invention, inventive faculty*; вспомога́тельный, *auxiliary*; честолю́біе, *ambition*; удовлево́рительный, *satisfactory*; путеше́ственникъ, *traveller*; законода́тельство, *legislation*; земледе́льческій, *agricultural*; царедво́рецъ, *courtier*.

Inflections  
of words.

16.—The parts of speech, or denominative words, are distinguished from the particles, or auxiliary words, by being subject to sundry *inflections* (измѣненія), which are usually of two kinds: *constant* (постоянныя) and *accidental* (случайныя).—1) The *constant* inflections are met with in the structure of derivative and compound words. This is what is called the *formation* (образованіе) of a word; e. g. царь, *king*; царица, *queen*; царскій, *royal*; царство, *kingdom*; царственный, *of the kingdom*; царствовать, *to reign*; царствованіе, *reigning*.—2) The *accidental* inflections are the different terminations and prepositions which a word takes, and which without changing its nature serve to express some circumstance connected with the idea designated by the word; e. g. рука, *the hand*; рукою, *with the hand*; руки, *the hands*; вижу, *I see*; видишь, *thou seest*; бѣлый, *white*; бѣлѣйшій, *whiter*; побѣлѣе, *a little whiter*, &c.

Metaplasms  
of words.

17.—The different inflections of which words are susceptible, undergo, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, *metaplasms* (перемѣны), which at times change even the final letters of the radical word. These metaplasms or alterations consist in the *permutation* (замѣна) of one letter for another; in the *epenthesis* (вставка) and *prosthesis* (приставка) of some letters, and in the *apocope* (усѣченіе) and *syncope* (изъятіе) of others.

Permutation  
of letters.

18.—The *permutation* of letters, in the Russian language, arises from the circumstance that some vowels cannot be placed in juxtaposition with certain consonants; thus the hissing, guttural and lingual

consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ; г, к, х; ц) cannot be joined with some vowels; the vowels я, е, ю, and the semi-vowel ъ, never admit immediately before them either the guttural consonants (г, к, х), in any inflection, or sometimes the dental and lisping consonants (д, т; з, с); and further the vowel и, in the derivation of words, never admits before it either the gutturals or the lingual (г, к, х; ц), which are then changed for the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), as is seen below.

## PERMUTATION OF LETTERS.

1. The consonants г, д, з, . . . . .	} before я, е, и, ю, ъ, . . . . .	{ change into ж. change into ч. change into ш. change into щ.
2. The consonants к, т, ц, . . . . .		
3. The consonants х, с, . . . . .		
4. The consonants ек, ет, . . . . .		
5. The vowel я, . . . . .	} after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, . . . . .	{ changes into а. changes into у.
6. The vowel ю, . . . . .		
7. The vowel ы, after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ, . . . . .		changes into и.
8. The vowel о, after ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, . . . . .		changes into е.
9. The vowel ъ, after the vowel і, . . . . .		changes into и.
10. The semi-vowel ъ, after a vowel, . . . . .		changes into й.
11. The semi-vowels ъ and ѣ, before a consonant with ъ, . . . . .		change into е.
12. The semi-vowel ъ, before two consonants, . . . . .		changes into о.

Examples: 1) *служить*, to serve; *вижу*, I see; *рѣжь*, cut, from *служá*, servant; *видѣть*, to see; *рѣзать*, to cut; 2) *мучить*, to torment; *свѣча*, candle; *отѣчество*, native land, from *мѣка*, torment; *свѣтъ*, light; *отѣцъ*, father; 3) *тѣше*, slower; *прошѣніе*, petition, from *тѣхъ*, slow; *просить*, to ask; 4) *ищу*, I seek; *чищу*, purer, from *искать*, to seek; *чистъ*, pure; 5) *служá* (for *служя́*), serving; 6) *вожѣ*, (for *вожѣю*), I lead; 7) *руки*, the hands; *мѣжи*, the men (for *ру́кы*, *мѣ́жы*); 8) *пальцемъ* (for *пáльцомъ*), with the finger; 9) *въ Россіи* (for *въ Россіѣ*), in Russia; 10) *недѣля*, week, has for its genitive plural *недѣль*; whilst *шея*, the neck, has *шей*; 11) *судьба́*, destiny; *копѣйка*, *копѣкѣ*, have in the genitive plural *судѣбъ*, *копѣекъ* (for *судьбъ*, *копѣйкъ*); 12) *во мнѣ*, in me; *со все́мъ*, with all (for *въ мнѣ*, *съ все́мъ*).

These permutations are subject to certain exceptions. The dental consonants (д, т) sometimes preserve the Slavonian per-

mutation жд and щ, as гражда́ннѣ, *citizen*; пи́ща, *aliment*, from градо́, city; пита́ть, to nourish. When the accented vowel *e* is pronounced *o* (after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), the vowel *o* may be used, as хорошо́, *well*; плечо́, *shoulder*; яйцо́, *egg*. It still remains to be observed that in words where г, к, х, ц, are changed before н and к, as по́жка, *a little foot*; вѣ́чный, *eternal*; пасту́шка, *shepherdess*; личны́й, *personal* (from ного́, foot; вѣ́къ, an age; пасту́хъ, shepherd; лице́, individual), the change is not required by the letters н and к, but arises from the circumstance that formerly the semi-vowel *v*, before which the consonants г, к, х, ц, change into ж, ч, ш, was employed before those consonants (но́вьска, вѣ́чный, &c.), but has been suppressed in modern orthography.

Epenthesis  
and pros-  
thesis.

19.—*Epenthesis*, or the insertion of a letter in the middle of a word, and *prosthesis*, or the addition of a letter at the beginning of a word, take place both to facilitate the pronunciation, and to unite letters which cannot be placed in juxta-position. The vowels *o* and *e* are inserted between two consonants at the end of words, and thus serve as a connecting link between the two roots of a compound word; e. g. огóнь, *fire*; вѣ́теръ, *wind* (instead of the Slavonian огонь, вѣ́тръ); законодáтель, *legislator*; землеопи-сáние, *geography*. The consonant л is inserted also after the labials (б, в, м, п, ф), when they ought to be followed by ю or е; e. g. люблю́, *I love*; дешéвле, *cheaper* (from люби́ть, to love; дѣ́шево, cheap). The consonant н is also epenthetic in внушáть, *to suggest*; поднимáть, *to take up*; на негó, *against him*. The consonant в is sometimes added at the beginning of a word, before the vowel *o*; e. g. вóсемь, *eight* (instead of the Slavonian осьмь); вóстры, *sharp*; вóтчина, *patrimony* (used familiarly for о́стрый, о́тчина). The same is the



case with the vowel *o* in *оржаной*, of *rye* (for *рыжаной*).

20.—*Ароскопе*, or the cutting of a letter at the end of a word, and *syncope*, or the elision of a letter in the middle of a word, are employed to facilitate or soften the pronunciation, e. g. со мною, *with me*; чтобъ, *in order that*; двѣнуть, *to move*; обѣщать, *to promise*; блеснуть, *to shine*; полтора, *one and a half* (instead of со мною, чтобы, двѣнуть, обѣщать, блеснуть, полтора).

Аросcope  
and syncope.

### THE SUBSTANTIVE.

21.—The *substantives* (существительныя имена) in the Russian language are of two kinds: common nouns or *appellatives* (нарицательныя), as: человекъ, *man*; городъ, *town*; рѣка, *river*; and individual or *proper* nouns (собственные), as: Владимѣръ, *Vladimir*; Москвѣ, *Moscow*; Волга, *the Volga*.—Among the common nouns we distinguish a class called *collective* (собираательныя), such are: народъ, *people*; стадо, *herd*; лѣсъ, *forest*; also *material* nouns (вещественныя), such are: мука, *flour*; масло, *oil*; золото, *gold*.—The proper names of men are of three kinds: a) *christian* names (крѣстные имена), as: Александръ, *Alexander*; Левъ, *Leon*; Ольга, *Olga*; Любовь, *Amu*; b) *patronymic* names (отчественныя), as: Александровичъ and Александровна, *son and daughter of Alexander*; Львовичъ and Львовна, *son and daughter of Leon*; and c) *family* names (прѣзвищныя, фамильныя), as: Державинъ, *Derzhavin*; Орловъ, *Orlof*; Долгорукий, *Dolgorooky*; Толстой, *Tolstoi*.

Division of  
substantives.

Properties  
of nouns.

22.—The properties of substantives in the Russian language are, the *gender* (родъ), the *aspect* (видъ), the *number* (число) and the *case* (падѣжъ). The two former are *constant* inflections, belonging to the formation of nouns; the two latter are *accidental* inflections, employed in the declension.

Genders.

23.—In the Russian language there are three genders: the *masculine* (мужескій), the *feminine* (женскій) and the *neuter* (средній). The genders of nouns are known, in the names of animate beings, by their *signification*, and in the names of inanimate and abstract objects, by their *termination*.

1. The *masculine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the male sex; e. g. отѣцъ, *the father*; геро́й, *the hero*; царь, *the king*; юноша, *a young man*; дѣ́дя, *an uncle*; мѣ́няло, *a money-changer*; подмасте́рь, *a journeyman*; and also, such names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in ѣ, и, and some which end in ъ, e. g. домо́, *the house*; поко́й, *repose*; корабль, *a vessel*.

2. The *feminine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the female sex; e. g. сестра́, *the sister*; ня́ня, *a nurse*; дочь, *the daughter*; Елиса́ветъ, *Elizabeth*; Клі́о, *Clio*; also the names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in а, я, and some which end in ъ; e. g. кни́га, *a book*; пу́ля, *a ball*; добродѣ́тель, *virtue*.

3. The *neuter* gender comprehends the names of animate beings where the distinction of sex is not evident, as: дитя́ and ча́до, *a child*; чудови́ще, *a monster*; and also the names of animate and abstract

objects terminating in о, е, and мя, е. г. зОЛОТО, *gold*; мОре, *the sea*; врЕмя, *the time*.

As regards the rules relating to the genders, the following observations are of importance:

1. The nouns which designate any particular species of animals, form an exception to the rule which declares the gender of nouns designating animate being to be determined by their *signification*. These nouns are, according to their *termination*, either masculine, as: чЕЛОВѢКЪ, *a man*; носорОГЪ, *a rhinoceros*; соКОЛЪ, *a falcon*; ОКУНЬ, *a perch*; or feminine, as: ОБЕЗЬЯНА, *an ape*; СОБАКА, *a dog*; ЛОШАДЬ, *a horse*; ЩЪКА, *a pike*.

2. To determine the gender of nouns terminating in ъ, the following rules may be given:

1) Besides such nouns as designate animate beings of the male sex, the following are *masculine*: а) The names of the months, as: янвАрь, *January*; июль, *July*; декАбрь, *December*, &c. б) The names of active objects, or agents, although inanimate, terminating in тЕль, as: числИТЕЛЬ, *the numerator*; мноЖИТЕЛЬ, *the multiplier*, &c. в) The common nouns designating animate beings, as: гуСЬ, *a goose*; лОсь, *an elk*; &c., with the exception of some names of animals which are feminine, such as: ЛОШАДЬ, *a horse*; сЕльдЬ, *a herring*; воШЬ, *a louse*; мыШЬ, *a mouse*; фОрЕль, *the trout*, and some others. г) The names of towns, lakes and places, whether Russian or foreign, as: ЯрослАвль, *Yaroslav*; СевастОполь, *Sebastopol*; БриССель, *Bruxelles*, with the exception of КазАнь, *Kazan*; АстрахАнь, *Astrachan*; Тверь, *Tvair*; ВерсАль, *Versailles*; БуЛОнь, *Boulogne*; МарсЕль, *Marseilles*; ИспагАнь, *Israhan*; ЭривАнь, *Erivan*.

2) The following are *feminine*: а) All the names of abstract objects, е. г. жизнЬ, *life*; чЕсть, *honour*, &c., with the exception of день, *the day*; пЕречень, *an extract*; вопль, *cries*; вихрь, *a whirlwind*; and foreign words, such as: контрОль, *control*; парОль, *parole*; спектакль, *spectacle*; стилЬ, *style*. б) The names of rivers and countries; е. г. Обь, *the Obi*; Сибирь, *Siberia*, &c., except Анадырь, *Anadir*. в) The common names of inanimate objects; е. г. бровь, *the eyebrow*; вѣтвь, *a branch*; цѣрковь, *a church*, &c., except the following which are masculine:

алкоголь, alcohol.	костыль, a crutch-stick.	ревень, the rhubarb.
алтарь, an altar.	кочень, a head of cab-	ремень, a strap.
бемоль, B-flat. [tunic.	кремёнь, a flint. [bage.	рубль, a rooble.
бешметъ, Tartar under	кремль, citadel, castle.	руль, the helm.
бизань, mizzen-sail.	крёндель, a cracknel.	сбитень, honey-tea.
биль, a billiard ball.	кубáрь, a top.	серáль, a seraglio.
блягирь, massicot. [sail.	ку́дерь, curly hair.	складень, a necklace.
брамсель, top-gallant	ку́коль, corn-cockle.	слизень, the slug.
бредень, a drag-net.	куль, a mat-sack.	словáрь, a dictionary.
буквáрь, ABC-book.	лáгерь, a camp.	срослeнь, double branch.
бюллетeнь, a bulletin.	ла́потъ, a bast-shoe.	ста́вень, a window-
вексель, bill of exchange.	ларь, a large chest.	shutter.
вeнзель, a monogram.	лeжeнь, foundation beam.	ста́ксель, stay-sail.
волдырь, a tubercle.	ло́котъ, the elbow.	ста́цель, stocks, launch.
гвоздь, a nail.	ломóть, a slice.	сте́бель, a stalk.
глаголь, a crane.	ма́рсель, top-sail.	сте́ржень, core (of a boil).
горбыль, a sleeve-board.	ме́ргель, marl.	стиха́рь, the surplice.
госпита́ль, a hospital.	минда́ль, almonds.	суда́рь, a winding-sheet.
гра́бень, a comb.	митка́ль, calico.	суха́рь, a rusk, biscuit.
гри́фель, a slate-pencil.	монасты́рь, a convent.	то́ноль, the poplar.
груздь, a fungus.	му́фель, a mouffle.	трeнзель, the curb.
де́готъ, tar.	нашаты́рь, sal ammoniac.	три́фель, a truffle.
двнáрь, denarius.	ни́коль, nickel.	ту́фель, a slipper.
дождь, rain.	но́готъ, a finger-nail.	уго́ль, charcoal.
дяги́ль, angelica.	нуль, a cipher, zero.	у́ровень, a level.
жёлудь, an acorn.	о́гонь, fire.	фити́ль, a match. [house].
жонки́ль, the jonquille.	ора́рь, the stole.	фли́гель, a wing (of a
золотeнь, golden-rod.	па́нцырь, coat of mail.	фона́рь, a lantern.
зубáрь, a toothed plane.	пень, a stump.	фу́хтель, flad side of a
йверeнь, a splinter.	перясти́ль, a peristyle.	хмeль, the hop. [sword.
вибу́рь, ginger.	перка́ль, shirting calico.	хде́нь, an object in mo-
калри́ль, a quadrille.	пе́рстень, a ring.	tion.
календа́рь, almanach.	пистóль, a pistole.	хруста́ль, crystal.
ка́мень, a stone.	пла́мень, flame.	црку́ль, pair of compas-
карто́фель, potatoes.	пла́стырь, a plaster.	цо́коль, the socle. [ses.
ка́шель, a cough.	плетeнь, wattled hedge.	чекме́нь, cosack upper-
ке́гель, a skittle.	портфе́ль, a portfolio.	coat.
ке́рвель, chervil.	по́ршень, a piston.	чернотáль, bay-leaved
кнeль, the keel (of a ship).	про́лежень, place chafed	willow.
ки́пень, hot-spring.	by lying.	чихи́рь, new wine.
кисeль, a sourish jelly.	проти́вень, dripping-pan.	шéлудь, the scab.
кистeнь, bullet tied to a	про́филь, a profile.	ше́фель, a bushel.
ко́готъ, a claw. [string.	пузы́рь, a bladder.	шквóрень, pole-bolt (of
козы́рь, a trump.	пу́пирь, a pimple.	a coach).
коло́дезь, a well.	пусты́рь, a vacant space.	шнeль, a capstan.
ко́бытень, wild nard.	пу́ть, the road.	штeмпель, a stamp.
кора́бль, a ship.	пéнязь, money.	штиль, a calm.
кóрень, a root.	ра́шкуль, blue-black.	щавeль, sorrel.
косáрь, chopping knife.	ра́шниль, a rasp.	щeбeнь, rubbish.



Ѣрь, the letter Ъ.

якорь, an anker.

ясень, the ash-tree.

эль, the letter Л.

янтърь, sea-amber.

ячмень, barley.

3. Words taken from foreign languages and ending in *и*, *у*, *ю*, as: колибри, *a humming bird*; какадѹ, *the kakatoo*; ревью, *the review*, are masculine, when they signify an animate being, and neuter when signifying an inanimate object. The other parts of speech, used as substantives, are neuter; e. g. грѣмкое урѣ, *a noisy hurrah*; пѣрвое нѣтъ, *the first no*; неснѣсное я, *an insupportable I*.

4. Some nouns, terminating in *а* and *я*, and designating animate beings, with some quality attached, are of the *common* gender (ѳбщій), being both masculine and feminine. The following are examples:

бродяга, a vagabond (*man or woman*).обжѳра, a glutton (*man or woman*).

брюзга, a grumbler.

плѣкса, a weeper.

ворожей, a fortune-teller.

порѹка, a surety.

выскочка, an upstart.

пустомѣля, a chatterer.

вѣтреница, a volatile person.

пьяница, a drunkard.

гуляка, a lazy person.

разія, a loiterer.

дѳка, a clever fellow.

рѳвня, a person of the same age.

забѣйка, a squabbler.

рубѣка, a slasher.

зѣйка, a stutterer.

самоѹчка, a self-taught person.

зѣвѣка, a ninny, a cockney.

святѳша, a bigoted person.

кривошея, a wryneck.

сирѳта, an orphan.

лѣкомка, a dainty person.

тѣзка, a namesake.

лѣвшѣя, a left-handed person.

убѣйца, a murderer or murderess.

мотѣга, a prodigal person.

ѹмница, a clever person.

невѣжда, an ignorant person.

ханжа, a hypocrite.

5. The genders of words signifying relationship, as also the names of animals, are distinguished in various ways. Sometimes by the employment of different words; e. g. отѣцъ, *the father*, and мать, *the mother*; сынъ, *the son*, and дочь, *the daughter*; братъ, *the brother*; and сестра, *the sister*; быкъ, *the bull*, and корѳва, *the cow*; пѣтѹхъ, *the cock*, and кѹрица, *the hen*; барѣнь, *the ram*, and овѣа, *the sheep*, &c. Sometimes the same word and the same gender are applied to both sexes; e. g. другъ, *a friend*; врагъ, *an enemy*; товѣрищъ, *a companion*; дитѣя, *a child* (*male and female*); ѳѳѳба, *a person*; occasionally the same word is used but with common gender, as has already been said. Usually however masculine nouns, if used to designate feminine objects, change their termination. In these, which are called *movable* nouns (дѣвѣжѣмыя), for the masculine ending

are substituted the feminine terminations: *а, я, ка, овка, иха, ица, ница, иня, ша*, and some others, the preceding consonant being at the same time often changed, as is seen in the following examples:

кумъ, godfather; кумá, godmother.  
павлѣнъ, peacock; пáва, peahen.  
господи́нъ, master; госпожа́, mistress.  
тестъ, father-in-law; те́ща, mother-in-law.

дуракъ; ду́ра, a fool, *m.* and *f.*  
козѣ́ль, a he-goat; коза́, a she-goat.  
госѣ́ть, a guest, *m.* and *f.*  
игу́менъ, an abbot; игу́менья, an abbess.

лгу́нъ; лгу́нья, a liar, *m.* and *f.*  
сосѣ́дъ; сосѣ́дка, a neighbour, *m.* and *f.*

слугá, man-servant; -жа́нка, maid-servant.

пасту́хъ, shepherd; -у́шка, shepherdess.

крестья́нинъ; крестья́нка, peasant, *m.* and *f.*

самѣ́цъ, a male; самка́, a female.

хозя́инъ, host; хозяй́ка, hostess.

жидъ, a Jew; жидѣ́вка, a Jewess.

чижъ, siskin; чижѣ́вка, hen-siskin.

щѣ́голь, a beau; щеголи́ха, a belle.

поваръ, a cook; повариха́, a cook-maid.

шутъ; шутѣ́вка, a buffoon, *m.* and *f.*  
левъ, a lion; льви́ца, a lioness.

имперáторъ, emperor; -патрѣ́ца, empress.

жрецъ, priest; жри́ца, priestess.

ка́рла; карлѣ́ца, a dwarf, *m.* and *f.*

жи́тель; жи́тельница, inhabitant, *m.* and *f.*

мона́хъ, a monk; мона́хиня, a nun.

князь, prince; княгѣ́ня, princess.

герѣ́й, hero; геро́иня, heroine.

богъ, a god; богѣ́ня, a goddess.

графъ, count; графѣ́ня, countess.

опеку́нъ; опеку́нша, a guardian, *m.* and *f.*

велика́нъ, giant; велика́нша, giantess.

коро́ль, king; королева́, queen.

баро́нъ, baron; баронѣ́сса, baroness.

госуда́рь; госуда́рыня, sovereign, *m.* and *f.*

старѣ́къ, an old man; стару́ха, an old woman.

швецъ, sempster; швейá, sempstress.

свѣ́коръ, father-in-law; свекро́вь, mother-in-law.

It remains to be observed that in professional names the Russian language makes a distinction between the name of the wife of a professional man, and the name of a woman who, herself, exercises a profession; e. g. инспектрѣ́ца, *inspectress*, and инспекторша́, *wife of an inspector*; лекар́ка, *a woman who practices medicine*, and лекарша́, *wife of a doctor*; двѣ́рница, *a female door-keeper*, and двѣ́рничиха́, *wife of a door-keeper*; учѣ́тельница, *schoolmistress*; and учѣ́тельница́, *wife of a schoolmaster* (from инспекторъ, лекаръ, двѣ́рникъ and учѣ́тель).

Aspects. 24.—Objects may present themselves to us in different forms, as greater or less, prettier or uglier, than ordinary; and the Russian language has different inflections to express these *aspects*.

1. The *augmentative* nouns (увеличительныя), which terminate in the masculine in *ище, ина*; in the neuter in *ище*, and in the feminine in *ища*, represent the object in a magnified form, at the same time adding the idea of ugliness or deformity; e. g. *мужичище, a great clownish peasant*; *дурачина, a great blockhead*; *лице, great face*; *лапища, a great paw* (from *мужикъ, дуракъ, лице* and *лапа*).

2. The *diminutive* nouns (уменьшительныя), which present the object diminished in size, end, in the masculine in *икъ, окъ, екъ, ецъ, якъ*; in the neuter in *ко, це*, and in the feminine in *ка, ца*, e. g. *стóлкъ, little table*; *червякъ, little worm*; *завóдецъ, little manufactory*; *деревцо, little tree*; *ручка, little hand*; *вещица, little thing* (from *столъ, червь, заводъ, дерево, рука* and *вещь*). From these diminutives others again are formed, as: *стóлчикъ, червячѣкъ, ручка, вещичка*.

Besides these diminutives, which lessen the force of the primitives, and which may be termed *physical* diminutives, there are further: *a*) diminutives of tenderness, friendship, or in one word, of feeling, which terminate in *ушка, юшка, енѣка*, as: *бáтюшка, dear father*; *мáтушка, dear mother*; *мáменька, dear mamma* (from *бáтя, мать* and *мáма*); and *b*) diminutives of contempt or slight, presenting the object in an unfavourable point of view; these terminate in *ушко, ушка, енка*, e. g. *дóмишко, a miserable little house*; *лошадѣнка, a miserable little horse*.

Christian names admit also diminutives, both in a favourable and unfavourable sense; thus *Ивáнь,*

*John*; Пётръ, *Peter*; Серѣй, *Sergius*, become as diminutives of feeling В́аня, Пётя, Серёжа, and as diminutives of contempt В́анька, Пётька, Серёжка. These diminutives, by which the primitive nouns are limited and changed, can only be learned by practice.

The diminutives properly so called, which indicate the smallness of objects, are very commonly employed in Russian, while diminutives of feeling and contempt are seldom used except in familiar language. The same remark applies equally to the augmentatives.

Numbers. 25.—In Russian, as in English, there are two numbers; the *singular* (ед́инственное числ́о), as: столъ, *the table*; кн́ига, *a book*; окн́о, *the window*; and the *plural* (мно́жественное), as: столы́, *the tables*; кн́иги, *books*; о́кна, *the windows*.

The Slavonian, like the Greek, has a third number, the *dual* (дво́йственное), which has been retained in certain Russian inflections, as will subsequently be seen.

Some substantives are only used in the *singular*; such are most proper names, and the names of material and abstract objects; e. g. серебр́о, *silver*; я́сность, *evidence*; любóвь, *love*. Others are only used in the *plural*; the following are of this class.

<i>Masculine gender.</i>	<i>Neuter gender.</i>	<i>Feminine gender.</i>
квасцы́, alum.	бѣлы́ла, white lead.	бирю́льки, the needle game.
лю́ди, people.	ворóта, yard-gate.	имя́нины, a name-day.
обѣя́, tapestry.	дровá, fire-wood.	но́жницы, scissors.
опилки́, saw-dust.	крѣсла́, an arm-chair.	око́вы, fetters, chains.
о́чки, spectacles.	пе́рѣла́, a balustrade.	о́трубѣ, bran.
прогóны, post-fare.	письме́на, letters.	ро́дины, delivery.
пя́льцы, a sewing-frame.	раме́на, shoulders.	ры́лѣ, a hurdy-gurdy.
судкѣ́, a cruet stand.	уста́, mouth.	са́ни, sledge.
тиски́, a press.	черни́ла, ink.	су́мерки, dawn.
щипцы́, snuffers.	чре́сла, the loins.	су́тки, day (24 hours).

Some names of towns are only used in the plural; such are: Бѣльцы́, Вязники́, Крестцы́, of the *masculine gender*, and Брѣнницы́, Холмогóры, and the foreign names: Аѣины́, *Athens*; Я́ссы, *Iassy*; О́йвы, *Thebes*, of the *feminine gender*.



26.—The *cases* are different inflections which nouns assume to indicate the mutual relation of objects. The English language has strictly speaking but one case, the genitive; the mutual relation of words being indicated either by a preposition or by the position of words in a phrase. In the Russian language there are seven cases, which may be known, in the names of animate beings, by putting the questions: *кто, когó, кому, когó, къмъ, о комъ?* and in the names of inanimate objects by the questions: *что, чегó, чему, что, къмъ, о чёмъ?* These are:

1. The *nominative* (именительный падежъ), which gives the name of an object in a phrase in answer to the question *кто* or *что?* e. g.

*Кто ѹчится? Ученикъ.*

Who studies? *The scholar.*

*Что предъ нимъ лежитъ? Книга.*

What is before him? *A book.*

*Книга.*

2. The *genitive* (родительный), which indicates possession, and which answers to the question *когó* or *чегó?* and also *чей, чья, чьё?* In English this case is expressed by the preposition *of*, or by an apostrophic *s*; e. g.

*Хозяинъ (чегó?) дома.*

The master (*of what?*) of the house.

*Домъ (чей?) сосѣда.*

The house (*of whom?*) of the neighbour.

*Слушайся (когó?) матери.*

Obeý (*whom?*) thy mother.

3. The *dative* (дательный), which designates the person or thing to which an object relates, and answers to the question *кому* or *чему?* In English the dative is usually indicated by the preposition *to*; e. g.



*is due this*  
 Кому́ слѣдуетъ сія награ́да? To whom does this recompense  
 Ученику́. come? To the scholar.

Чему́ ты обра́довался? Кни́гу. With what were you delighted?  
 With a book.

4. The *accusative* (винительный), which commonly  
 called in English grammars the *objective*, answers  
 to the question *кого́* or *что́*? e. g.

Кого́ ты хва́лишь? Ученика́. *praise thou* Whom do you praise? The scholar.

Что́ ты купи́лъ? Кни́гу. What have you bought? A book.

5. The *vocative* (звательный), which expresses  
 the name of the person or object addressed; e. g.

Учени́къ, будь приле́жень! Scholar, be attentive!

Бо́же, спаси́ Царя́! God, save the Emperor!

6. The *instrumental* (творительный) or *causa-*  
*tive*, which designates the means or cause, and  
 answers to the question *къмъ́* or *чьмъ́*? In English  
 the prepositions *with* and *by* are commonly used  
 for this purpose; e. g.

Къмъ́ дово́льны? Ученико́мъ. With whom is one satisfied?  
 With the scholar.

Чьмъ́ онъ заба́вля́ется? Кни́- With what does he amuses him-  
 гою. self? With a book.

7. The *prepositional* (предложный) or *locative*,  
 which answers to the questions *о́ комъ́* or *о́ чьмъ́*?  
*въ́ комъ́* or *въ́ чьмъ́*? &c. This case, which in  
 ecclesiastical Slavonian is called *narrative* (сказа-  
 тельный), is termed in Russian *prepositional*, because  
 it is always accompanied by one of the prepositions  
*въ́*, *in*; *на́*, *on*; *о́* or *объ́*, *of*; *по́*, *after*; *при́*, *near*  
*то́*; e. g.

О́ комъ́ гово́рятъ? Объ́ уче- Of whom do they speak? Of  
 никъ́. the scholar.

Въ́ чьмъ́ ты нахо́дишь удо́воль- In what do you find pleasure?  
 ствіе́? Въ́ кни́гу. In a book.

Two of these seven casual inflections, the *nominative* and *vocative*, are called *direct* cases (прямые), because they simply give the name of the object; the remaining five are termed *oblique* (косвенные).

27.—The change of the inflections in nouns, showing the numbers and cases, is called *declension* (склонение), and substantives are divided, according to the manner in which they are declined, into *regular* and *irregular*. Declension of substantives.

28.—Regular substantives, according to their termination, have three declensions: the *first* for nouns with the *masculine termination*, (ъ, и, ь); the *second* for those with the *neuter termination* (о, е, я), and the *third* for those with the *feminine termination* (а, я, ь). Each of these declensions has three inflections, one *hard*, and two *soft*, as exhibited in the table below. The two following observations relative to this subject are important. Regular substantives.

1. The *vocative* is always like the *nominative*, except in the words Богъ, *God*; Господь, *Lord*; Исусъ, *Jesus*; Христосъ, *Christ*; Отецъ, *Father*, which, in an invocation of the Deity, preserve the Slavonian inflection; Бóже, Гóсподи, Исýсе, Христé, О́тче.

2.—The *accusative, singular* of ~~masculine~~ nouns in the two first declensions, and *plural* in all three, is like the *nominative* when the noun designates an inanimate or abstract object, and like the *genitive* in the names of animate beings.

Masculine nouns, ending in *атель* and *итель*, and designating inanimate agents, such as знаменáтель, *the denominator*; дѣлитель, *the divisor* (in arithmetic), are declined like the names of animate beings, and consequently their *accusative* is like the

genitive. The same is the case with the names of inanimate objects which have been borrowed from animate, as: спѹтникъ, *a satellite* (of a planet). The word идолъ, *idol*, has its accusative like the genitive, whilst in its synonymes кумиръ and истуканъ, the accusative is like the nominative. The word лице, signifying *the face* and *an individual*, is used in both its meanings like the name of an inanimate object, its accusative being always the same as the nominative.

The collective nouns are always declined like the names of inanimate objects, though signifying a collection of animate beings, such as народъ, *a nation*; войско, *an army*; стадо, *a herd*.

DECLENSIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.											
SINGULAR.	CASES: NUMBERS:.....	FIRST.			SECOND.			THIRD.			
		MASC. TERMINATION.			NEUTER TERMINATION.			FEM. TERMINATION.			
		Hard infl. Soft infl.			Hard infl. Soft infl.			Hard infl. Soft infl.			
		N.	G.	D.	N.	G.	D.	N.	G.	D.	
	N.	ъ	й	ь	о	е	мя	а	я	ь	
	G.	а	я	я	а	я	ени	ы	и	и	
	D.	у	ю	ю	у	ю	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и	
	A.	... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> ....						у	ю	ь	
	V.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i> .....									
	I.	омъ	емъ	емъ	омъ	емъ	енемъ	ою (ой)	ею (ей)	ию (ью)	
PLURAL	P.	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ѣ	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и	
	N.	ы	и	и	а	я	мена	ы	и	и	
	G.	овъ (ей)	евъ	ей	ѣ	ей (й, ѣ)	енъ	ѣ (ей)	ѣ (й, ѣ)	ей	
	D.	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	амъ	ямъ	енамъ	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	
	A.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> .....						.....			
	V.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i> .....									
	I.	ами	ями	ями	ами	ями	енами	ами	ями	ями	
	P.	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ	ахъ	яхъ	енахъ	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ	

Rules of the  
declensions.

29.—In declining the regular nouns, certain rules are to be observed, some of which are *general*, being common to all the three declensions, while others are *special*, being confined to one of the declensions or one of the inflections.

1. According to what has already been observed (§ 18) relative to the permutation of letters, *a*) the vowel *u*, of the *genitive singular* and *nominative plural*, is changed for *u* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ); *b*) the vowel *o*, when without accent, of the *instrumental singular* and *genitive plural*, is changed for *e* after the lingual and hissing consonants (л; ж, ч, ш, щ), observing however that after the lingual (л) the vowel *o* may be used if it is accented; *c*) the vowel *o* of the *dative* and *prepositional singular* is changed for *u* after the vowel *i* (in nouns in *iŭ*, *ie* and *iя*). (See the paradigms 2, 3, 8, 16, 20, 21, 26).

2. A great number of nouns elide in the *other cases* (excepting in the *instrumental singular* of feminine nouns in *b*) the vowel *e* or *o*, inserted in the termination of the *nominative singular*; but we must observe that in this elision the vowel *e* is changed for *ь* after the consonant *л*, and for *ѣ* after a vowel. (See paradigms 2, 4, 10, 28).

3. In such nouns of the II and III declension as have two consonants before the final vowel, the vowel *o* or *e* is usually inserted between the two consonants in the *genitive plural*; in such cases however the *e* is always substituted for the semi-vowels *ь* and *ѣ*. (See paradigms 12, 13, 20, 23).

4. The *genitive plural* has some particular inflections: the inflection *ей* (instead of *овъ* and *ъ*) is peculiar to nouns in *овъ*, *въ*, *шъ*, *щъ*, *ца*, to those in *ова*, *ва*, *ша*, preceded by another consonant, and to those in *ве* and in *ва*; the inflection *ѣ* to nouns in *е* and *я* preceded by a vowel, and the inflection *ѣ* to nouns in *ве* and *ва*, contracted from *ие* and *ія*. (See paradigms 3, 16, 21, 24, 25, 26).

5. Such nouns as are only used in the *plural*, are declined according to the paradigm to which, by their termination, they belong. Thus among the *masculine* nouns, хоробы, *edifice*, is declined according to the 1st paradigm (законы); щипцы, *snuffers*, according to the 2d (отцы); обои, *tapestry*, according to the 6th (герои); люди, *men* (*instr.* людьми), according to the 9th (короли); among the *neuter* nouns, дрова, *firewood*, according to the 11th (слова); кресла, *arm-chair* (*gen.* креселъ), according to the 12th (стёкла); письма, *letters*, according to the 18th (времена); among the *feminine* nouns, окобы, *chains*, according



to the 19th (коробы); носѣлки, *a hand-barrow* (*gen.* носѣлокъ), according to the 20th (пѣлки); сѣни, *a sledge*, and рыльѣ, *a hurdy-gurdy*, according to the 27th (страсти).

6. *Foreign nouns*, whether common or proper, ending in *ъ, ѣ, б*; *a, я, в*, are declined like Russian nouns with the same terminations, whilst those in *е, и, о, у* and *ю*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with family names of females, whatever may be their termination. Thus *ѳинибусъ, an omnibus*; Лондонъ, *London*, are declined according to the 1st paradigm (законъ); конвоѣй, *a convoy*; Барклай, *Barclay*, according to the 6th (герой); водевилъ, *a vaudeville*; Брюссель, *Bruxelles*, according to the 19th (король); пѣса, *a piece*, (of music, &c.); Петръ, *Petrarch*, according to the 19th (корова); колонія, *a colony*, according to the 26th (молія); гавань *f. a haven*, according to the 27th (страсть). But кофе, *coffee*; колибри, *a humming-bird*; депѳ, *depot* (military); рѣндеву, *a rendez-vous*; ревью, *a review*; Кастелье, *Castlereagh*; Морѳ, *Moreau*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with the feminine family names; as Жанлисъ, *Staal*, &c.; thus we say: у Госпожи Жанлисъ, *at the house of Mrs Genlis*; сочинѣнiе Госпожи Сталь, *the work of Mrs Staël*.

Special  
rules.

1. Nouns ending in *ѣнокъ*, signifying the young ones of animals, are masculine in the singular; but in the plural they preserve the Slavonian inflection *ята* or *ата*, and are neuter. (See paradigm 4).

2. Nouns ending in *янинъ* or *анинъ* and in *яринъ* or *аринъ*, have peculiar inflections in the plural. (See paradigm 5).

3. In the *instrumental singular* of the III declension, *оу* is contracted in *оѣ*, *ею* in *еѣ*, and *юу* in *юѣ*; thus we say: рукѳю or рукѳѣ, *with the hand*; землѳю or землѳѣ, *by the earth*. (See paradigm 28). In the same manner the *instrumental plural* *ями* of some nouns in *в* is contracted in *ѳми*, the accent being in such cases placed on the last syllable; thus we say: людѳмѣ, *with men*; дверьмѣ, *by gates*; лошадьмѣ, *with horses* (and not людѳми, дверьми, лошадьми).

4. The *genitive singular* of masculine nouns in *ъ, в, ѣ*, signifying divisible matter, often takes, especially in familiar language, the inflection *у* and *ю* of the dative (instead of *a* and *я*); thus we say: фунтъ сахару, *a pound of sugar*; лѳжка дѣгтю, *a spoonful of tar*; чѳшка чѳю, *a cup of tea*. The same



inflection (instead of *н*) is also found in the *prepositional singular*, accompanied with the preposition *въ* or *на*, in some nouns in *з* and *щ*, and in such cases takes the tonic accent; thus we say: *въ саду́*, in the garden; *на краю́*, on the brink.

5. In *compound substantives*, the first word is also declined, if in its junction with the second it has preserved the termination of its nominative singular; thus *Ца́рьградъ*, *Constantinople*, is declined according to the 9th and the 1st paradigm: *Г. Царягра́да, D. Царюгра́ду, I. Царемъгра́домъ, P. о Царьгра́дъ*. With respect to the names of towns compounded of the adjectives *новъ* and *бѣлъ*, as *Нѡвгородъ*, *Бѣло́зеро*, and to the common nouns formed of the numeral *полъ*, *the half*: as: *пѡлдень*, *midday*; *пѡгода*, *half a year*, we refer the student to our remarks on that subject in the declension of the adjectives and numerals.

30.—By observing the above general and special rules we shall be able to decline all the regular nouns of the Russian language according to the following 28 paradigms. Paradigms of the declensions of substantives.

According to the 1st paradigm (зако́нъ) are declined nouns First declension. in *з* (with the exception of those which belong to the 4 following paradigms), remembering however to change *и* into *у* after the gutturals (*г, к, х*), and *о* into *е* after the lingual (*ц*), and observing further, that several nouns of the 1st declension throw the accent on the inflections of the cases, some commencing with the genitive singular, others with the nominative plural, and others again with the genitive plural. Such are:

Ба́рапъ, the ram. <i>Г. бара́на.</i>	Да́ръ, the gift. <i>Г. да́ра; N. пл. дары́.</i>
Верте́пъ, the cavern. <i>верте́па.</i>	До́лгъ, the debt. <i>до́лга; долги́.</i>
Ку́миръ, an idol. <i>ку́мира.</i>	Чи́нъ, a rank. <i>чи́на; чины́.</i>
Волхвѣ, the magician. <i>волхва́.</i>	Ша́ръ, a ball. <i>ша́ра; шары́.</i>
Врагѣ, the enemy. <i>вragá.</i>	Бо́гъ, a god; <i>N. пл. бо́ги, Г. бого́въ.</i>
Язы́къ, the tongue. <i>языка́.</i>	Ворѣ, a robber; <i>во́ры, воро́въ.</i>
Пѣту́хъ, a cock. <i>пѣтуха́.</i>	Гро́бъ, a coffin; <i>грѡбы́, грѡбо́въ.</i>
Мѣся́цъ, a month. <i>мѣсяца́.</i>	Дубѣ, an oak; <i>ду́бы, дубо́въ.</i>
Кузне́цъ, the blacksmith. <i>кузнеца́.</i>	Волкѣ, the wolf; <i>во́лки, волко́въ.</i>

According to the 2d paradigm (оте́цъ) are declined the nouns in which the vowel *е* or *о* of the nominative is elided in the other cases, observing at the same time the change of *е* into *ѵ* after the consonant *л*, and into *ѣ* after a vowel. Such are:

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE DECLENS

		S I N G U				
		<i>Nominat. and Vocat.</i>		<i>Genitive.</i>	<i>Dat.</i>	<i>Accus.</i>
DECLENSIONS:	PARADIGMS:	1.	закѡнъ, the law . . .	закѡн-а . . .	у . . .	
		2.	отѣцъ, the father . . .	отц-а . . .	ѣ . . .	
		3.	шалашъ, a cabin . . .	шалаш-а . . .	ѣ . . .	
		4.	теленѡкъ, a calf . . .	теленк-а . . .	у . . .	
		5.	дворянинъ, a gentleman	дворянин-а . . .	у . . .	
		6.	герѡй, the hero . . .	герѡ-я . . .	ю . . .	
		7.	соловѣй, a nightingale	солов-ѣя . . .	ѣю . . .	
		8.	гѣній, a genius . . .	гѣнї-я . . .	ю . . .	
		9.	корѡль, the king . . .	корол-я . . .	ю . . .	
		10.	огѡнь, the fire . . .	огн-я . . .	ю . . .	
SECOND.	TERMINATIONS:	о	11.	слѡво, a word . . .	слѡв-а . . .	у . . .
			12.	стеклѡ, the glass . . .	стекл-а . . .	ѣ . . .
			13.	колѣчко, small ring . . .	колѣчк-а . . .	у . . .
		е	14.	мѡре, the sea . . .	мѡр-я . . .	ю . . .
			15.	ружьѣ, a gun . . .	ружь-ѣя . . .	ѣю . . .
			16.	мнѣнїе, an opinion . . .	мнѣнї-я . . .	ю . . .
		мя	17.	дѣтише, n. a great child	дѣтищ-а . . .	у . . .
			18.	врѣмя, the time . . .	врѣм-ени . . .	ени . . .
THIRD.	PARADIGMS:	а	19.	корѡва, a cow . . .	корѡв-ы . . .	ѣ . . .
			20.	пѣлка, a stick . . .	пѣлк-и . . .	ѣ . . .
			21.	возжѣ, a bridle . . .	возж-ї . . .	ѣ . . .
		я	22.	недѣля, the week . . .	недѣл-и . . .	ѣ . . .
			23.	пѣсня, a song . . .	пѣсн-и . . .	ѣ . . .
			24.	свѣя, a pile . . .	свѣ-и . . .	ѣ . . .
		б	25.	судѣя, the judge . . .	суд-ѣи . . .	ѣѣ . . .
			26.	мѡлнїя, a lightning . . .	мѡлнї-и . . .	и . . .
			27.	страсте, a passion . . .	страст-и . . .	и . . .
			28.	ложь, the lie . . .	лж-и . . .	и . . .

(the *Nom.*, in the names of inanimate beings.  
the *Gen.*, in the masc. names of animate beings.  
like

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the declensions, the following rules are to be observed.

1. Nouns of the 1st declension commonly preserve through all the cases both of the singular and plural, the accent of the nominative singular. But most polysyllabic nouns, the termination of which is accented, transfer the accent to the inflection of the genitive, and keep it on this syllable through all the other cases. Several monosyllables follow the same rule. Other monosyllables preserve the nominative accent in the singular, but in the plural they transfer it to the inflections of the cases, some in all the cases, others from the genitive downwards.

2. In the 2nd declension, the accent serves to distinguish the nominative plural from the genitive singular. On this account, those nouns which in

## SIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

L A R.			P L U R A L.					
<i>Instrum. Prep.</i>			<i>Nom. and Voc. Genitive.</i>		<i>Dative.</i>	<i>Accus.</i>	<i>Instrum. Prepos.</i>	
омъ . . ѣ . .			закѡн-ы . . . .	овъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
ѣмъ . . ѣ . .			отцъ-ы . . . .	ѣвъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
ѣмъ . . ѣ . .			шалашъ-ы . . . .	ей . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
омъ . . ѣ . .			телѣт-а . . . .	ъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
омъ . . ѣ . .			дворѣ-н . . . .	ъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
емъ . . ѣ . .			герѡ-н . . . .	евъ . . . .	ямъ . . . .		ями . . . .	яхъ . .
бѣмъ . . ѣ . .			соловѣ-и . . . .	бѣвъ . . . .	ѣямъ . . . .		ѣями . . . .	ѣяхъ . .
емъ . . и . .			гѣнѣ-и . . . .	евъ . . . .	ямъ . . . .		ями . . . .	яхъ . .
ѣмъ . . ѣ . .			королѣ-и . . . .	ей . . . .	ѣямъ . . . .		ѣями . . . .	ѣяхъ . .
ѣмъ . . ѣ . .			огнѣ-и . . . .	ей . . . .	ѣямъ . . . .		ѣями . . . .	ѣяхъ . .
омъ . . ѣ . .			слов-а . . . .	ъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
омъ . . ѣ . .			стѣкл-а . . . .	стѣколъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
омъ . . ѣ . .			колѣчк-и . . . .	колѣчекъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
емъ . . ѣ . .			морѣ-и . . . .	ей . . . .	ѣямъ . . . .		ѣями . . . .	ѣяхъ . .
бѣмъ . . ѣ . .			ружѣ-я . . . .	ей . . . .	ѣямъ . . . .		ѣями . . . .	ѣяхъ . .
емъ . . и . .			мнѣи-я . . . .	й . . . .	ямъ . . . .		ями . . . .	яхъ . .
емъ . . ѣ . .			дѣтѣи-и . . . .	ъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
енемъ . . ени . .			врем-енѣ . . . .	ѣнъ . . . .	енѣямъ . . . .		енѣями . . . .	енѣяхъ . .
ою . . ѣ . .			корѡв-ы . . . .	ъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
ою . . ѣ . .			пѣлк-и . . . .	пѣлокъ . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
ѣю . . ѣ . .			вѡзж-и . . . .	ей . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .
ею . . ѣ . .			недѣл-и . . . .	ъ . . . .	ямъ . . . .		ями . . . .	яхъ . .
ею . . ѣ . .			пѣсн-и . . . .	пѣсенъ . . . .	ямъ . . . .		ями . . . .	яхъ . .
ею . . ѣ . .			свѣ-и . . . .	й . . . .	ямъ . . . .		ями . . . .	яхъ . .
бѣю . . ѣ . .			судѣ-и . . . .	ей . . . .	ѣямъ . . . .		ѣями . . . .	ѣяхъ . .
ею . . и . .			мѡлнѣ-и . . . .	й . . . .	ямъ . . . .		ями . . . .	яхъ . .
ію . . и . .			страстѣ-и . . . .	ей . . . .	ѣямъ . . . .		ѣями . . . .	ѣяхъ . .
лѡжью . . лжи . .			лж-и . . . .	ей . . . .	амъ . . . .		ами . . . .	ахъ . .

like { the *Nominative*, in the names of inanimate beings.  
the *Genitive*, in the names of animate beings.

singular have the accent on the first syllable, transfer it in the plural to the last; while, on the contrary, those which in the singular have the accent on the last syllable, transfer it in the plural to the first, and keep it on that syllable through all the cases, both of the singular and plural.

3. In the III<sup>d</sup> declension a distinction between the genitive singular and nominative plural only takes place in such nouns in *a* and *я*, as have the accent on the termination. These nouns transfer the accent to the first syllable in the nominative plural, resuming in all the other cases the accent of the singular. Some of these nouns have also in the accusative singular the accent on the first syllable. Among the nouns in *ъ*, there are several which transfer the accent to the inflections on the cases, from the genitive plural downwards.—The examples to these different rules here follow.

Орёлъ, an eagle, *Г. орла*.  
 Ковёръ, a carpet, *ковра*.  
 Крючѣкъ, a hook, *крючкѣ*.  
 Левъ, a lion, *льва*.  
 Кулёкъ, a sack, *кулькѣ*.  
 Илемъ, the elm-tree, *илма*.  
 Конёкъ, a skate, *конькѣ*.  
 Боёцъ, a wrestler, *бойца*.  
 Заяцъ (and зайцъ), a hare, *зайца*.  
 Опёкъ, a calf's skin, *опёйка*.

Багоръ, a hook, *Г. багра*.  
 Посолъ, an ambassador, *посла*.  
 Лобъ, the forehead, *лоба*.  
 Псаломъ, a psalm, *псалма*.  
 Ротъ, the mouth, *рта*.  
 Участокъ, a portion, *участка*.  
 Сонъ, sleep, *сна*.  
 Уголъ, an angle, *угла*.  
 Замокъ, a castle, *замка*.  
 Замокъ, a lock, *замкѣ*.

According to the 3d paradigm (шала́шъ) are declined such nouns in *ъ* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as form the *genitive plural* in *ей*; such are:

Падёжъ, the case, *Г. падежа*.  
 Платёжъ, the payment, *платежа*.  
 Моржъ, a walrus, *моржа*.  
 Ёжъ, a hedgehog, *ежа*.  
 Ключъ, the key, *ключа*.  
 Лучъ, a ray, *луча*.  
 Кирпичъ, a brick, *кирпича*.  
 Мечъ, a sword, *меча*.

Пала́шъ, the sabre, *Г. палаша*.  
 Ланда́шъ, the mayflower, *ландыша*.  
 Кара́ндашъ, a pencil, *карандаша*.  
 Тора́шъ, the mercer, *торгаша*.  
 Пла́щъ, a mantle, *плаща*.  
 Ле́щъ, the bream, *леща*.  
 Това́рищъ, a comrade, *товарища*.  
 Ово́щъ, a fruit, *овоща*.

According to the 4th paradigm (телёнокъ) are declined the names of the young of animals, ending in *ёнокъ*, which, having retained in the plural the Slavonian inflection *ята* (or *ата* after *ю* and *ч*), are neuter and consequently belong, in the singular to the 1st declension, and in the plural to the 2d. Some of these nouns however form their plural regularly in *енки*. Such are:

Ягнёнокъ, a lamb; *Н. пл. ягнѣта*.  
 Жеребёнокъ, a foal; *жеребѣта*.  
 Цыплёнокъ, a pullet; *цыплята*.

Поросёнокъ, a little pig; *поросѣта*.

Котёнокъ, a kitten; *котѣта*.  
 Ребёнокъ, a child; *ребѣта*.

Ослёнокъ, a young ass; *Н. пл. ослѣта*.  
 Волчёнокъ, a wolf's cub; *волчѣта*.  
 Медвѣжёнокъ, a bear's cub; *медвѣжѣта*.

Львёнокъ, a lion's whelp; *Н. пл. львѣнки*.

Галчёнокъ, a young awl; *галчѣнки*.  
 Мышёнокъ, a young mouse; *мышѣнки*.

Also щенóкъ, a *pup*, *Г. щенкѣ*, *Н. пл. щенѣта* and щенки́.

According to the 5th paradigm (дворя́нинъ) are declined nouns in *инъ*, *анинъ*, *яринъ* and *аринъ*, which in the *plural* change *инъ* into *е*, *ъ*, *амъ*, &c.; such are:

Селя́нинъ, a villager; *Н. пл. селя́не*.  
 Крестя́нинъ, a peasant; *крестья́не*.

Мі́рянинъ, a layman; *Н. пл. мі́ряне*.  
 Поселя́нинъ, a husbandman; *поселя́не*.



Семьяни́нъ, the head of a family; <i>N. pl.</i> семья́не.	Огнѣщани́нъ, a freeman; <i>N. pl.</i> огнѣ- щане.
Росси́янинъ, a Russian; Росси́яне.	Христи́анинъ, a Christian; христи́ане.
Граждани́нъ, a citizen; гражда́не.	Боѣринъ, a lord; боѣре.
Мѣщани́нъ, a burgher; мѣщане.	Бѣлгаринъ, a Bulgarian; Бѣлгаре.

According to the 6th paradigm (геро́й) are declined the nouns in *й*, with the exception of those in *и́й* and of some in *е́й*, which belong to the two following paradigms. Such are:

Покѣ́й, a room, <i>G.</i> покѣ́я.	Лнша́й, a scab, <i>G.</i> лнша́я.
Злодѣ́й, a wretch, злодѣ́я.	Пай, a part, па́я.
Казначѣ́й, a treasurer, казначѣ́я.	Бой, the combat, <i>G.</i> бо́я; <i>N. pl.</i> боѣ́.
Сара́й, a coach-house, сара́я.	Рой, a swarm, ро́я; роѣ́.
Слѣ́чай, the occasion, слѣ́чая.	Строй, the rank, стрѣ́я; строѣ́.
Нало́й, a desk, нало́я.	Чай, the tea, ча́я; чаѣ́.

According to the 7th paradigm (соловѣ́й) are declined eight nouns in *е́й*, as change the *e* of the nominative into *ѣ* in all the other cases. Some Christian names in *и́й*, in familiar language, are declined in the same manner. Such are:

Воробѣ́й, a sparrow, <i>G.</i> воробѣ́я.	Чи́рей, a furuncle, <i>G.</i> чи́рья.
Муравѣ́й, an ant, муравѣ́я.	Васи́лій, Basil, Васи́лья.
Ручѣ́й, a brook, ручѣ́я.	Григо́рій, Gregory, Григо́рья.
Репѣ́й, a little ribbon, репѣ́я.	Левѣ́нтій, Leontius, Левѣ́нтья.
У́лей, a bee-hive, у́лья.	Прокѣ́фій, Procopius, Прокѣ́фья.
Жѣ́ребей, the lot, жѣ́ребья.	Игна́тій, Ignatius, Игна́тья.

According to the 8th paradigm (ге́ній) are declined such nouns in *и́й*, as take the inflection *и* (instead of *ѣ*) in the *prepositional singular*; such are:

Вика́рій, a vicar, <i>G.</i> вика́рія.	Виночѣ́рпій, a cup-bearer, <i>G.</i> вино- чѣ́рпія.
Инвента́рій, an inventory, инвента́рія.	Мерку́рій, Mercury, Мерку́рія.
Коммента́рій, a commentary, -мен- та́рія.	Се́ргій, Sergius, Се́ргія.

Some substantives in *й*, as портно́й, a tailor; ко́рмчі́й, the pilot, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 9th paradigm (коро́ль) are declined the masculine nouns in *ѣ*, with the exception of those which belong to the following paradigm. Such are:

Жѣ́лудъ, an acorn, <i>G.</i> жѣ́лудя.	Госуда́рь, a sovereign, <i>G.</i> госуда́ря.
Коло́дезь, a well, коло́дезя.	Оле́нь, a stag, оле́ня.
Учи́тель, the teacher, учи́теля.	Медвѣ́дь, a bear, медвѣ́дя.
Сѣ́болю, a sable, сѣ́боля.	Ца́рь, a king, ца́ря.
Слѣ́сарь, a lock-smith, слѣ́саря.	Кора́бль, a vessel, кора́бля.



Фонарь, a lantern, *G.* фонаря.

Фитиль, a match, фитиля.

Гусь, a goose; *N. pl.* гуси, *G.* гусей.

Голубь, a pigeon; голуби, голубей.

Звѣрь, a beast; звѣри, звѣрей.

Червь, a worm; черви, червей.

According to the 10th paradigm (огóнь) are declined such masculine nouns in *o*, as elide the vowel *e* or *o* in all the other cases; such are:

Камень, a stone, *G.* камня.

Стебель, a stem, стебля.

Лапоть, a bast shoe, лаптя.

Ремень, a thong, ремня.

Кремень, a flint, кремня.

Ломоть, a slice, ломтя.

Кóрень, the root; *N. pl.* корни, *G.* корней.

У'горь, an eel; у'гри, угрей.

Ноготь, a nail; ногти, ногтѣй.

Кóготь, a claw; когти, когтѣй.

Пѣрстень, a ring; пѣрстни, перстнѣй.

Локоть, the elbow; локти, локтѣй.

In the list of masculine nouns in *o*, given in § 23, which elide the vowel *e* or *o* of the nominative, this vowel is printed in *italics*.

Second  
declension.

According to the 11th paradigm (слóво) are declined the nouns in *o*, and those in *це*, *же*, *че* and *ше* (with the exception of such as belong to the following paradigm, of the diminutives in *ко* and *це* and augmentatives in *ше*), observing however the change of *o* into *e* after the hissing consonants and the lingual (ж, ч, ш, ц), and remarking that several nouns of the II<sup>d</sup> declension transfer in the plural the accent from the first syllable to the last, and *vice versâ*. Such are:

Тѣло, the body, *G.* тѣла; *N. pl.* тѣла.

Стадо, a herd, стада; стада́,

Зеркало, a mirror, зеркала; зеркала́.

О'зеро, a lake, о́зера; озѣра.

Вино, the wine, вина́; ви́на.

Село, a village, села́; се́ла.

Колесо, a wheel, колеса́; колѣса.

Долото, a chisel, долота́; долóта.

Чадо, *n.* a child, *G.* and *N. pl.* ча́да.

Свѣти́ло, a star, свѣти́ла.

Мѣня́ло, *m.* a changer, мѣня́ла.

Лице́, the face, *G.* лица́; *N. pl.* лица́.

Яйце́, an egg, яйца́; яйца́ (*G.* яи́цы).

Плече́, the shoulder, плеча́; плѣча.

Лóже, the couch, *G.* and *N. pl.* лóжа.

Вѣче, an assembly, вѣ́ча.

Жили́ще, a dwelling, жили́ща.

Зрѣ́лище, a spectacle, зрѣ́лища.

Сокрови́ще, a treasure, сокрови́ща.

Гульби́ще, a promenade, гульби́ща.

Учи́лище, a school, учи́лища.

Кладби́ще, a cemetery, кладби́ща.

According to the 12th paradigm (стеклó) are declined those nouns in *o* and *e*, preceded by two consonants, which usually insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, observing at the same time that the nouns in *це* take the vowel *e*, and that the semi-vowel *o* between the two consonants is changed into *e*. Such are:

Ребро́, a rib; *N. pl.* ребра́, *G.* реберъ.

Пятно́, a spot; пята́на, пята́нь.

Зерно́, a grain; зѣрна, зѣренъ.

Щемло́, a vice, *N. pl.* щемла́, *G.* щемелъ.

Сукно́, cloth; сукна́, суконъ.

Окно́, the window; окна́, оконъ.

Бревнó, a beam; <i>N. pl.</i> брёвна, <i>G.</i> брёвенъ.	Числó, a number; <i>N. pl.</i> числа, <i>G.</i> чиселъ (and числъ).
Письмó, a letter; письма, писемъ.	Сéрдце, the heart; сердцá, сердéцъ.
Полотнó, linen; полóтна, полóтенъ.	Кольцé, a ring; кольца, колецъ.
Сѣдлó, a saddle; сѣдла, сѣделъ.	Крыльцé, a step; крыльца, крылецъ.

It is necessary to observe that in nouns in *здо*, *сто*, *ско* and *ство*, the genitive plural is formed without the insertion of any letter; e. g. Гнѣздó, *a nest*; мѣстó, *a place*; вóйско, *an army*; чýвство, *the feeling*,—*gen. plur.* Гнѣздъ, мѣстъ, войскъ, чувствъ.

According to the 13th paradigm (колéчко) are declined the diminutives in *ко* and *це*, which form their *nominative plural* in *и* (for those in *ко*) or in *ы* (for those in *це*), inserting the vowel *e* in the genitive plural. Such are:

Сердéчко, little heart; <i>pl.</i> сердéчки, -дéчекъ.	Дóнце, little bottom; <i>pl.</i> дóнцы, -дéчекъ.
Мѣстéчко, little place; мѣстéчки, -мѣшекъ.	Дýльце, mouth piece; дýльцы, -мѣшекъ.
Крыльцéшко, little wing; крыльцéшки, -мѣшекъ.	Рыльце, littlesnout; рыльцы, -мѣшекъ.
Домíшко, little house; домíшки, -мíшекъ.	Полотéнце, a towel; полотéнцы, -тéнецъ.

According to the 14th paradigm (мóре) are declined those nouns in *ле* and *ре*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*; e. g.

Пóле, the field; <i>G.</i> поля, <i>N. pl.</i> полá, <i>G.</i> полéй.
Гóре, a grief; гóря (not used in the <i>plural</i> ).

According to the 15th paradigm (ружьё) are declined those nouns in *ве* and in *ее*, which change in the *genitive plural*, *ве* and *ее* into *ей*, and *ве*, a contraction of *ие*, into *йй*. Such are:

Жилъё, a floor; <i>pl.</i> жилъя, <i>G.</i> жилéй.	Плáтье, a coat, <i>G. pl.</i> плáтей.
Копьё, a lance; копъя, копéй.	Верхóвье, a spring, верхóвей.
Питьё, a beverage; пítъя, пítéй.	Весéлье, an enjoyment, весéлйй.
Лезвё, the edge; лéзвья, лéзвéй.	Воскресéнье, Sunday, воскресéнйй.
Острéе, the point, edge; острéя, острéй.	Повѣрье, a belief, повѣрйй.

The following nouns in *ве* form their *genitive plural* in *вевъ*: подмáстерье *m.*, *the journeyman*; кúшанье, *a dish*; помѣстье, *a domain*; úстьe, *mouth* (of a river); варéнье, *a preserve*.

According to the 16th paradigm (мнѣнiе) are declined nouns in *иe*, which form their *genitive plural* in *йй*, and which in the *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*). In

these nouns the accent of the nominative plural is the same as that of the genitive singular. Such are:

Здѣніе, an edifice, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> здѣнія.	Оружіе, an arm, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> оружія.
Знѣніе, knowledge, знѣнія.	Явлѣніе, an apparition, явлѣнія. [нія.]
Желѣніе, the desire, желѣнія.	Сообщѣніе, a communication, сообщѣ-
Понѣтіе, an idea, понѣтія.	Сомнѣніе, the doubt, сомнѣнія.
Собрѣніе, an assembly, собрѣнія.	Владѣніе, the possession, владѣнія.
Растѣніе, a plant, растѣнія.	Созвѣздіе, a constellation, созвѣздія.

According to the 17th paradigm (дѣтище) are declined the augmentative nouns, which form their plural in *и, ей, &c.*; e. g.

Домѣще, great house; <i>pl.</i> домѣщи, -щей.	Століще, great table; <i>pl.</i> століщи, -щей.
Дворѣще, great court, дворѣщи.	Козліще, <i>m.</i> great he-goat; козліщи.
Мужичѣще, <i>m.</i> big peasant; мужичѣщи.	Покѣище, great room; покѣищи.

Some substantives in *ое*, as живѣтное, *an animal*; морѣженое, *ice-creams*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 18th paradigm (врѣмя) are declined nouns in *мя*. In the plural the accent is transferred to the last syllable. Such are:

Брѣмя, the burden, <i>N. pl.</i> бремени.	Плѣмя, the race, <i>N. pl.</i> племена.
Вымя, an udder, вымени.	Стрѣмя, the stirrup, стрѣмена.
Имя, the name, имени.	Тѣмя, the sinciput, тѣмена.
Плѣмя, the flame (no <i>plural</i> ).	Знамя, the flag, знамени and знамена.

By the same paradigm is declined сѣмя, *seed*, *plur.* сѣмена, which however has retained in the genitive plural the Slavonian inflection сѣмянъ (instead of *сѣмѣнъ*), to be distinguished from the proper name Семѣнъ, *Simeon*.

Third  
declension

According to the 19th paradigm (корѣва) are declined the nouns in *а* (excepting such as belong to the two following paradigms). It is necessary to observe the change of *ы* into *и* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш), and of *о* into *е* after the hissings and the lingual (ж, ч, ш; ц), and also to remark that several nouns of the III<sup>d</sup> declension in *а* and *я* transfer the accent in the nominative plural, and some of them also in the accusative singular, from the last syllable to the first. Such are:

Рыба, the fish, <i>G. and N. pl.</i> рыбы.	Звѣзда, a star, <i>G.</i> звѣзды; <i>N. pl.</i> звѣзды.
Шляпа, a hat, шляпы.	Женá, the wife, жени́; жёны.
Побѣда, victory, побѣды.	Слугá, a servant, слуги́; слуги.
Рóза, a rose, рóзы.	Рѣкá, a river, рѣки́; рѣки.
Кни́га, a book, книги.	Водá, water, <i>G.</i> воды́, <i>A.</i> во́ду, <i>N. pl.</i> во́ды.
Соба́ка, a dog, собаки.	Зимá, winter, зимы́, зиму́; зими́.
Му́ха, a fly, му́хи.	Рукá, the hand, руки́, ру́ку; ру́ки.
Ко́жа, the skin, кожи́.	Голова́, the head, головы́, голову́; го́ловы.
Ту́ча, the cloud, тучи́.	Сковорода́, a frying pan, сковороду́, ро́ды.
Гру́ша, a pear, груши́.	
Вдовá, a widow, <i>G.</i> вдовы́; <i>N. pl.</i> вдо́вы.	

According to the 20th paradigm (па́лка) are declined most nouns in *a* preceded by two consonants, or by one consonant and *ь* or *й*, which insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, *ь* and *й* then changing into *e*. Such are:

Ложка, the spoon; <i>G. pl.</i> ложекъ.	Койма́, the hem; <i>G. pl.</i> коёмъ.
Сосна́, the fir; сосенъ.	Копѣйка, a copeck; копѣекъ.
Сказка́, a tale; сказокъ.	Райна́, a ship's yard; раёнъ.
Шапка́, a cap; шапокъ.	Сва́дьба, the marriage; свадебъ.
У́тка, a duck; утокъ.	Судьба́, fate; <i>N. pl.</i> судьбы́, <i>G.</i> судебъ.
Овца́, a sheep; <i>A.</i> овцу́, <i>G. pl.</i> овецъ.	Тюрьма́, the prison; тюрьмы́, тюремъ.
Доска́, a plank; доску́, досокъ.	Серьга́, an ear-ring; серьги́, серёгъ.

The vowels *o* or *e* are inserted solely to facilitate the pronunciation; for if the two or three consonants in juxta-position can be articulated without difficulty, the insertion does not take place. Thus: просьба́, *the demand*; ста́роста, *a bailiff*; верста́, *a werst*; же́ртва, *a victim*, form their *genitive plural*: просьбъ́, ста́ростъ́, ве́рстъ́, жертвъ́. The *genitive plural* of война́, *war*, is во́йнъ, and that of та́йна, *a sacrament*, is та́инъ.

According to the 21th paradigm (возжа́) are declined nouns in *жа, ча, ша*, preceded by a consonant, as also those in *ща*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*. Such are:

Ханжа́, a bigot; <i>G. pl.</i> ханжей.	Лѣвшá, a left-handed person; <i>G. pl.</i> лѣвше́й.
Парча́, brocade; парчей.	Вѣкша́, a squirrel; вѣкшей. [лѣвшей.]
Притча́, a proverb; притчей.	Роща́, a grove; рощей.
Каланча́, a belfry; каланчей.	Толща́, the thickness; толщей.

In the same manner are declined юноша́, *young man*, and пашá, *a pacha*, *G. pl.* юношей́ and пашей́.

According to the 22th paradigm (недѣля́) are declined nouns in *я*, preceded by a consonant, which form their *genitive plural*



in *ь*, with the exception of some which form it in *ей*, and others in *ь* and *ей*. Such are:

Баня, the bath; *G. pl.* бань.  
 Пуля, a ball; пуль.  
 Буря, a tempest; бурь.  
 Гиря, a weight; гирь.  
 Дыня, a melon; дынь.  
 Богиня, a goddess; богинь.  
 Пустыня, a desert; пустынь.  
 Потёра, a loss; потёрь.

Дядя, the uncle; *G. pl.* дядей.  
 Броня, a cuirass; броней.  
 Пеня, a fine; пеней.  
 Поздря, a nostril; поздрей.  
 Стезя, a footpath; стезей.  
 Доля, a portion; долей and доль.  
 Заря, the dawn; зарей and зарь.  
 Тоня, fishing-net; тоней and тоть.

According to the 23th paradigm (пёсны) are declined the nouns in *ля* and *ня*, preceded by another consonant, by *ь* or by *й*, which insert in the *genitive plural* the vowel *е* (one single noun takes the vowel *о*), or change *ь* and *й* into *е*. Such are:

Сабля, a sabre; *G. pl.* сабель.  
 Басня, a fable; басень.  
 Башня, a tower; башень.  
 Деревня, a village; деревень.  
 Кровля, a roof; кровель.  
 Пётля, a running-knot; петель.  
 Земля, the earth; земёлъ (*A. s.* землю).

Объя, the mass; *G. pl.* обьденъ.  
 Кухня, the kitchen; кухонь.  
 Спальня, a dormitory; спальень. [мень.  
 Богадёльня, an almshouse; богадё-  
 Швальня, a sewing room; швальень.  
 Бойня, a slaughter-house; боень.  
 Водопо́йня, a horse-pond; водопое́нь.

The substantive *земля* takes, in the prepositional singular with *на*, the Slavonian inflection *на землѣ*, *on the earth*, to be distinguished for *на землѣ*, *on the ground*.

According to the 24th paradigm (свѣя) are declined those nouns in *я* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those in *ія*), which form their *genitive plural* in *й*; such are:

Вѣя, the neck; *G. pl.* вей.  
 Лядвѣя, the hip; лядвѣй.  
 Струя, a current; струй.  
 Верѣя, a post; верей.  
 Шея, the neck; шей.  
 Змѣя, a serpent; змей.  
 Со́я, the jay; сой.  
 Сбру́я, an armour; сбруй.

The names of foreign towns, ending in *оа* and *уа*, are declined in the same manner, except in the *accusative*, which they form in *у* (and not in *ю*); e. g. Гѣнуа, Genoa, *A.* Гѣнуу. Мѣнтуа, Mantua, Мѣнтуу. Падуа, Padua, Падуу. Го́а, Goa, Гоу.

Some nouns in *ая*- and *яя*, as: *кладовая*, a *storehouse*; *передняя*, an *antechamber*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 25th paradigm (судья) are declined the nouns in *ья*, which in the *genitive plural* change this termination into *ей*, and if it is contracted from *ія*, into *ий*. Such are:



Ладья, a boat; *G. pl.* ладей.  
 Скамья, a bench; скамей.  
 Статья, an article; статей.  
 Свинья, a pig; свиней.  
 Семья, the family; семей.

Гостья, a female guest; *G. pl.* гостей.  
 Лгунья, a female liar; лгуней.  
 Сватья, a female relation; сватей.  
 Келья, a cell; келій.  
 Игуменья, an abbess; игуменій.

According to the 26th paradigm (молнія) are declined the nouns in *я*, which in the *dative* and *prepositional singular* take the inflection *у* (instead of *ю*), and which form their *genitive plural* in *ий*. Such are:

Армія, an army, <i>D.</i> армін; <i>G. pl.</i> армій.	Стихія, an element, <i>D.</i> стихін; <i>G. pl.</i> стихій.
Копія, a copy, копія; копій.	Комедія, a comedy, комедін; комедій.
Лілія, a lily, лілій; лілій.	Трагедія, a tragedy, трагедін; трагедій.
Лінія, a line, ліній; ліній.	Витія, an orator, витін; витій.

According to the 27th paradigm (страсть) are declined the feminine nouns in *ь*, observing at the same time the change of *я* into *а* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), and remarking that several of these nouns transfer in the plural the accent to the casual inflections, from the genitive plural downwards. Such are:

Ткань, a tissue; <i>G. pl.</i> тканей.	Бровь, an eyebrow; <i>N. pl.</i> брови, <i>G.</i> бровей.
Печать, a seal; печатей.	Кисть, a tuft; кисти, кистей.
Кровать, a bedstead; кроватей.	Ветвь, a branch; ветви, ветвей.
Ель, a fir; елей.	Дверь, the door; дверей ( <i>И.</i> дверьмі).
Свирель, a pipe; свирелей.	Лошадь, a horse; лошадей ( <i>И.</i> дьмі).
Ладонь, the palm of the hand; ладоней.	Плеть, a whip; плетей ( <i>И.</i> плетьмі).
Осень, the autumn; осеней.	Ночь, the night, ночей; <i>D.</i> ночамъ.
Мечеть, a mosque; мечетей.	Печь, a stove, печей; печамъ.
Болезнь, a malady; болезней.	Мышь, a mouse, мышей; мышамъ.
Добродетель, virtue; добродетелей.	Вещь, a thing, вещей; вещамъ.

According to the 28th paradigm (ложь) are declined five nouns in *ь*, which elide the vowel *о* of the nominative in the other cases, except in the instrumental singular; these are:

Вошь, a louse, <i>G.</i> вши, <i>И.</i> вошью.	Любовь, love, <i>G.</i> любви, <i>И.</i> любовью.
Рожь, rye, ржи, рожью	Церковь, the church, церкви, церковью.

The noun церковь takes, in the *dative*, *instrumental* and *prepositional plural*, the hard inflection *амъ, ами, ахъ*: церквѣмъ, церквѣми, о церквѣхъ. Любовь, used as a Christian name, retains the vowel through all the cases, *G.* Любви, &c.

Irregular  
nouns.

31. — The *irregular* nouns are such as take in some cases an inflection different to what they ought to have, according to the termination of their nominative singular; or such as form their plural in a particular manner.

1. Several nouns in *з* and *б* take in the *nominative plural* the inflection *а́*, *я́*, with the tonic accent (instead of *ы*, *у*), while the genitive remains in *овъ*, *евъ*, *ей*, and the other cases regular. Such are:

Бѣрегъ, the shore, <i>рл.</i> берега́, берего́въ.	По́гребъ, a cellar, <i>рл.</i> погреба́, -бо́въ.
Бокъ, the flank, бока́.	Пло́тъ, a curtain, полога́.
Вѣчеръ, the evening, вечера́.	Профѣссоръ, a professor, профессорá.
Голосъ, the voice, голосо́.	Рукáвъ, a sleeve, рукава́.
Горо́дъ, the town, городá.	Флю́геръ, a weather-cock, флюгера́.
До́кторъ, a doctor, докторá.	Шо́мполь, a ramrod, шомпола́.
Жѣрно́въ, a millstone, жернова́.	Хлѣ́въ, a stall, хлѣва́.
Ка́теръ, a cutter, катера́.	Хо́лодъ, the cold, холода́.
Ки́веръ, a shako, кивера́.	Сто́рожъ, a guard, сторожа́, стороже́й.
Ко́локолъ, a bell, колюкола́.	Вѣксель, a bill of exchange, -ля́, -лей.
Ку́черъ, a coachman, кучера́.	Вѣнзель, a monogram, вензеля́.
.Лугъ, a meadow, лугá.	Ёгеръ, a hunter, егеря́.
Лѣсъ, a forest, лѣса́.	Кре́ндель, a cracknel, кренделя́.
Ма́стеръ, a master, мастера́.	Ле́карь, a surgeon, лекаря́.
Ми́чманъ, a midshipman, мичмана́.	Пи́сарь, a writer, писаря́.
О́стровъ, an island, острова́.	Фли́гель, wing of a house, флигеля́.
Па́русъ, a sail, паруса́.	Ште́мпель, a stamp, штемпеля́.
По́варъ, a cook, повара́.	Я́корь, an anker, якоря́.

In the same manner *тѣтеревъ*, a grouse, has in *N.* *рл.* тетерева́; but in the genitive *тетеревѣй* (instead of *тетеревѣвъ*).

2. Some nouns in *з*, *б*, *о*, form their *plural* in *ья́*, *евья́*, *ьямъ*, &c., changing the gutturals *з* and *к* before *ь* into *ж* and *ч*. Such are:

Бра́тъ, the brother, <i>рл.</i> братья́, -евъ.	Пру́тъ, a twig, <i>рл.</i> прутья́, прутьевъ́.
Бру́съ, a beam, брусья́.	Поло́зь, a slide, полозья́.
Кли́нъ, a wedge, клинья́.	Сту́лъ, a chair, сту́лья.
Клокъ, a lock, кло́чья.	Зя́ть, son-in-law, зятя́.
Ко́лосъ, an ear, коло́сья.	Звенó, a link, звѣнья́.
Ко́лъ, a stake, ко́лья.	Крыло́, a wing, кры́лья.
Комъ, a heap, ко́мья.	Перó, a feather, перья́.
Копы́лъ, a sledge-bar, копы́лья.	Полѣ́но, a billet of wood, полѣ́нья.
Коча́нъ, a head of cabbage, коча́нья.	Помелó, a malkin, помелья́.
.Лубъ, a sheet of bark, лубья́.	Шило́, an awl, шилья́.

3. Some nouns in *ъ* have their *genitive plural* like the nominative singular (instead of *овъ*), e. g.

Алтынъ, three corecks; <i>пл.</i> алтыны, алтынъ.	Рекрутъ, a recruit; <i>пл.</i> рекруты, рекрутъ.
Аршинъ, an ell; аршины, аршинъ.	Сапогъ, a boot; сапоги, сапогъ.
Гренадёръ, a grenadier; гренадёры, -дёръ.	Солдатъ, a soldier; солдаты, солдатъ.
Драгунъ, a dragoon; драгуны, драгунъ.	Турокъ, a Turk; Турки, Турокъ.
Пудъ a pood; пуды, пудъ.	Уланъ, a hulan; уланы, уланъ.
Разъ, a time; разы, разъ.	Цыганъ, a gipsy; цыганы, цыганъ.
	Чулкъ, a stocking; чулки, чулкъ.
	Грузинъ, a Georgian; Грузины, Грузинъ.

We can however say regularly пять пудовъ, *five poods*; нѣсколько рекрутовъ, *some recruits*. The substantive человекъ, *man*, has also the genitive plural like the nominative singular, but only in junction with a numeral, as пять человекъ, *five men*; in all other cases it is regular; e. g. друзьяи человекоевъ, *the friends of the men* — The substantive саженъ, *a toise*, has likewise in the genitive plural сажень, the accent being transposed; and день, *the day*, in familiar language, takes the same inflection when in junction with a numeral; e. g. семь дѣнъ, *seven days* (instead of семь дней).

4. The following nouns form their *plural* in different ways.

Глазъ, the eye, { have *a, ъ, амъ*, &c.: глаза, глазъ, глазамъ; волоса, Волосъ, a hair, { волосъ, волосамъ (and also regularly: волосы).

Баряиъ, a lord, { change *инъ* into *a, ъ, амъ, ами, атъ*: бара, баръ, Господиинъ, master, { барамъ; господа, господъ, господамъ; Татара (and Татариинъ, a Tartar, { Татари), Татаръ, Татарамъ, &c.

Хозяиинъ, a housekeeper, *plur.* хозяева, хозяевъ, хозяевамъ, &c.

Шуриинъ, a brother-in-law, *plur.* шурья, шурьевъ, шурьямъ, &c.

Другъ, a friend, { have their plural in *я, ей, ямъ*, &c. (другъ changes з into э): друзья, друзей, друзьямъ; князь, князей; Мужъ, a husband, { мужья, мужей, &c. The latter, in the sense of *man*, is regular: мужи, мужей, мужамъ, &c.

Кумъ, a godfather. { form their plural in the same way by inserting the Сватъ, a kinsman, { syllable *ов*: кумовья, кумовей; сватовья, сватовей; Сынъ, the son, { сыновья, сыновей, &c. Сынъ, with a *figurative* meaning, is regular: сыны, сыновъ, &c.

Сосѣдъ, a neighbour, { take in the plural the soft inflection *и, ей, ямъ*, &c.: сосѣди, сосѣдей, сосѣдямъ (and also regular: Холѣиъ, a bondman, { сосѣды, сосѣдовъ); холѣи, холѣпей; черти, чертей, Чѣртиъ, the devil, { чертямъ, &c.

Сѣлице, the sun, { take the masculine termination: *ы, евъ, амъ*, or *и, О'блако, a cloud, { овъ, амъ*, &c.: сѣлицы, сѣлицевъ; облаки, облаковъ, Очкѣ, a rip, point, { (and also regular: облака, облакъ); очки, очковъ; Ушкѣ, a handle, { ушки, ушковъ, ушкамъ, &c.

Вѣко, the eyelid, { form their plural in *и, ъ, амъ*, &c.: вѣки, вѣкъ, вѣкамъ; Яблоко, an apple, { яблоки, яблокъ (and яблоковъ), яблокамъ, &c.

Небо, heaven, Чудо, a wonder,	{ have in the plural: небеса́, небёсъ, небеса́мъ; чудеса́, чудёсъ, чудеса́мъ, &c. Небо, in the sense of <i>palate</i> , has no plural, and чудо, signifying <i>a monster</i> , is regular: чу́да, чудѣ, чу́дамъ, &c.
О́ко, the eye, У́хо, the ear,	{ form their plural in <i>и, ей, амъ</i> , with the permutation of the consonant: очѣ, очѣй, оча́мъ, оча́ми; у́ши, ушѣй, уша́мъ, ушѣми (instead of <i>уша́ми</i> ). This inflection is properly the Slavonian dual; the plural, which is sometimes used in poetry, is: очеса́, ушеса́
Дитя́, a child,	{ which in the singular has preserved the Slavonian declension: <i>G. D. and P. дитя́ти, I. дитя́темъ and дитя́тею</i> , has in plural: <i>N. дѣти, G. and A. дѣтѣй, D. дѣтямъ, I. дѣтьми, P. о дѣтяхъ.</i>

Ку́рица, a hen, *plur.* ку́ры, курѣ, ку́рамъ, &c.

Слю́на, the slaver, *plur.* слю́ни, слюнѣй, слюня́мъ, &c., with the soft inflection.

5. Some nouns have a double inflection in the *plural*, the one regular, the other irregular.

a) Some have two inflections in the nominative only, and without any difference in the meaning of the word; such are:

Вѣ́къ, an age, <i>pl.</i> вѣ́ки and вѣ́ка, вѣ́ковъ.	Поя́съ, girdle, <i>pl.</i> поя́сы and пояса́, -совъ.
Го́дь, a year, го́ды and го́да, годо́въ.	Рогъ, a horn, ро́ги and рога́, рого́въ.
До́мъ, a house, до́мы and до́ма, домо́въ.	Снѣ́гъ, snow, снѣ́ги and снѣга́, снѣго́въ.
Ко́рпусъ, body, ко́рпусы and корпуса́, -совъ.	Сто́гъ, a stack, сто́ги and стога́, стого́въ.
Ку́полъ, cupola, ку́полы and купола́, -ловъ.	Стру́гъ, a bark, стру́ги and струга́, -говъ.
Ме́дъ, honey, ме́ды and меда́, медо́въ.	
О́корокъ, a ham, о́корки and окорока́, -овъ.	Тѣ́ремъ, a room, тѣ́ремы and терема́, Край, the brink, край and кра́я, краёвъ.

б) Others have two inflections through all the cases, the irregular inflection being used where the substantive has a collective meaning; such are:

Бато́гъ, a stick, <i>pl.</i> бато́ги, бато́говъ, and бато́жья, бато́жьевъ, &c.
Вну́къ, the grandson; вну́ки, вну́ковъ, and вну́чата, вну́чать, &c.
Крю́къ, a hook; крю́ки, крю́ковъ, and крйо́чья, крйо́чевъ.
Обо́дь, a felloe; обо́ды, обо́довъ, and ободо́ья, ободо́ьевъ.
Лоску́тъ, a shred; лоску́ты, лоску́товъ, and лоску́тья, лоску́тьевъ.
Стру́пъ, a scurf; стру́пы, стру́повъ, and стру́нья, стру́ньевъ.
Су́къ, a branch; су́ки, су́ковъ, and су́чья, су́чевъ.
Че́репъ, a potsherd; черепа́, чере́повъ, and чере́пья, чере́пьевъ.
Волды́рь, <i>m.</i> a tubercle; волды́ри, волды́рей, and волды́рья, волды́рьевъ.
Ка́мень, <i>m.</i> a stone; ка́мни, ка́мней, and ка́меня, ка́мне́евъ.



Корень, *m.* a root; корни, корнѣй, and корѣнья, корѣньевъ.  
 Пузырь, *m.* a bladder; пузыри, пузырѣй, and пузырья, пузырьевъ.  
 Пупырь, *m.* a pimple; пупыри, пупырѣй, and пупырья, пупырьевъ.  
 Уголь, *m.* the charcoal; угли, углѣй, and уголья, угольевъ.  
 Дерево, a tree; дерева, деревъ, and деревьа, деревьевъ.  
 Дыра, a hole; дыры, дыръ, and дырья, дырьевъ.  
 Щель, *f.* a chink; щели, щелѣй, and щельевъ.

c) Others again have two inflections with totally different meanings; such are:

Зубъ, a tooth (in the mouth), *pl.* зѣбы, зубовъ, and tooth (of a saw), зѣбья, зѣбьевъ.

Капля, a drop (of water), капли, капель, and drops (in medicine), капли, каплей.

Листъ, a leaf (of paper), листы, листовъ, and a leaf (of a tree), листьа, листьевъ.

Мужъ, a man, мѣжи, мужѣй, and a husband, мужья, мужѣй.

Мѣхъ, a fur, мѣхи, мѣховъ, and a pair of bellows, мѣха, мѣховъ.

Образъ, the form, образы, образовъ, and an image, образа, образовъ.

Поводъ, a motive, поводы, поводовъ, and a rein, поводья, поводьевъ.

Судно, a vessel (utensil), судны, суденъ, and a vessel (ship), суда, судовъ.

Хлѣбъ, a bread, хлѣбы, хлѣбовъ, and a corn, хлѣба, хлѣбовъ.

Цветъ, a flower, цветы, цветовъ, and a colour, цвета, цветовъ.

d) Lastly there is one substantive which in the plural has three inflections, a different meaning being conveyed by each; viz.

Колѣно, { a tribe, *pl.* колѣна, колѣнъ, колѣнамъ, &c.  
 the knee, *pl.* колѣни, колѣней, колѣнямъ, &c.  
 a joint (of a plant), *pl.* колѣнья, колѣньевъ, колѣньямы, &c.

6. The declension of the following nouns is quite irregular:

Господь, the Lord, { is declined like a noun in *ъ*, with the hard inflection:  
*G.* Господа, *D.* Господу, *I.* Господомъ; the *vocative*  
 is: Гѣподи.

Христѣсъ, Christ, { cuts off in all the other cases the syllable *ос*: *G.* Христѣа,  
*D.* Христѣу, *I.* Христѣомъ, *P.* о Христѣ, *V.* Христѣ.

Дочь, a daughter, { insert in the inflections of the cases the syllable *ер*:  
 Мать, the mother, { *G.* and *D.* дѣчери and мѣтери, *I.* дѣчерью and мѣтерью;  
*plur.* *N.* дѣчери and мѣтери, *G.* дѣчерѣй and мѣтерѣй,  
*I.* дѣчерьми and мѣтерьми, &c.

Плѣмень, flame, { although masculine, takę in the *genitive*, *dative* and  
 Путь, the way, { *prepositional* singular the feminine inflection *и*: плѣмени,  
 путѣ; but the instrumental case is regular (плѣменемъ,  
 путѣмъ).



# EXERCISES IN THE DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

Nominative and Genitive.    The master of the garden and the mistress of the house.  
Хозяинъ                    садъ                    и                    хозяйка                    домъ.

The garden of the master and the house of the mistress.  
Садъ                    хозяинъ                    и                    домъ                    хозяйка.

The roaring of the lions; the song of the nightingale; the  
Рыканіе                    левъ;                    пѣніе                    соловѣй;

bellowing of the bull, of the ox and of the cow; the neighing  
мычаніе                    быкъ,                    волъ и                    корова;                    ржаніе

of the horses; the barking of the dog; the cooing of the pigeons;  
лошадь *f*;                    лай                    собака; воркованье                    голубъ *m*;

the sawing of the crows; the croaking of the frogs; the howling  
карканье                    воронъ;                    кваканье                    лягушка;                    вой

of the wolf; the buzzing of the bees, of the cock-chafers and  
волкъ;                    жужжаніе                    пчелá,                    жукъ                    и

of the flies; the bleating of the rams and of the ewes. A chimney  
муха;                    блеяніе                    баранъ и                    овца.                    Каминъ

without fire; windows without panes; groats without butter;  
безъ огонь *m*;                    окно                    безъ стекло;                    каша                    безъ масло;

saddles without stirrups; a charge without ball; islands and  
седло                    безъ стрѣмя;                    зарядъ                    безъ пуля;                    островъ и

meadows without trees; cooks, coachmen and labourers without  
лугъ                    безъ дерево;                    поваръ, кучеръ и                    работникъ безъ

work; children without mother; soldiers without muskets;  
работá;                    дитя                    безъ мать;                    солдаты безъ                    ружьѣ;

muskets without flints; a statue without arms and without  
ружьѣ безъ кремѣнь *m*;                    статуя                    безъ рука и                    безъ

ears; young bears and young lions without hair; vessels  
ухо;                    медвѣженокъ и                    львенокъ безъ шерсть *f*;                    корабль *m*

without hammocks; ships without oars; tea without sugar and  
безъ                    койка;                    судно                    безъ весло; чай                    безъ сахаръ и

without cream. A bunch of pens; a dozen of cups, of plates  
безъ сливки *f*. Пукъ перо; дюжина чашка, тарелка

and of glasses; five scores of trouts; half a score of melons;  
и стаканъ; сотня форель *f*; десятокъ дыня;

a quantity of geese, of ducks and of swans; herds of cattle;  
множество гусь *m*, утка и лебедь *m*; стадо скотъ;

studs of horses. The men of antiquity, and the husbands  
табунъ лошадь *f*. Мужъ древность *f* и мужъ

of the wives. The flowers of the gardens and the colours  
женá. Цветъ садъ и цветъ

of the rainbow. The leaves of paper and the leaves of the trees.  
радуга. Листъ бумага и листъ дерево.

The teeth of the mouth and the teeth of a comb. The tribes  
Зубъ во (*prep.*) ротъ и зубъ у гребень *m*. Колѣно

of the Israelites, the knees of a man, and the joints of plants.  
Израильтянинъ, колѣно у человекъ, и колѣно растѣнiе.

The taking of herrings on the coasts of America has been very  
Ловъ сельдь *f* у берегъ Америка былъ очень

profitable to the English, the Swedes, the Dutch and  
выгоденъ для (*gen.*) Англичанинъ, Шведъ, Голландецъ и  
the French.

Французъ.

Advice to friends. Glory to God. Woe to the enemies. Nominative  
Советъ другъ. Слава Богъ. Горе врагъ. and Dative.

The general order to the troops. Obedience to the laws. Give  
Приказъ войско. Повиновѣнiе законъ. Дай

food to the geese, to the hens, to the pigeons and to the  
ѣсть гусь *m*, курица, голубъ *m* и

little dogs. To act conformably to the laws of honour. *f*  
щенокъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правило честь.

To live according to his situation. A law given as well  
Жить прилично состоянiе. Законъ, данный какъ

for the nobles as for the citizens. To be against the wishes дворяни́нъ, такъ и мѣщани́нъ. Проти́виться желáние of the children, and the desire of the parents. The books, дитя́, и во́ля роди́тель. Кни́га, the pens and the papers belong to the scholars, and not перо́ и тетра́дь принадле́жатъ учени́къ, а не to the masters. The fields and the meadows belong to the учи́тель. По́ле и лу́гъ принадле́жатъ father and to the mother, and the gardens, as well as the forests оте́ц и ма́ть, а са́дъ, какъ и ле́съ, to the sons and to the daughters. To be agreeable to the men сынъ и дочь. Нра́вится мужчи́на and to be disagreeable to the women. The verdure is agreeable и не нра́вится же́нщина. Зе́лень f нра́вится to the eyes. The pictures please the sisters and the flowers глазъ. Карти́на нра́вятся сестра́, а цвѣ́тъ the brothers. Useful to the country; agreeable to God and брать. Поле́зный оте́чество; прі́ятный Богъ и to men; faithful to the sovereign; dear to friends; agreeable лю́ди; вѣ́рный госуда́рь; любѣ́зный другъ; ми́лый to children. Man is known by his face, by his voice, by дитя́. Человѣ́къ узна́ется по ли́цѣ, по го́лосѣ, по his figure, by his walk and by the motions of his body. Tourists ростъ, по похóдка и по тѣлодви́женіе. Тури́сты travel in Switzerland, in France, in Italy, in Germany, путеше́ствуютъ по Швейца́рія, Фра́нція, Ита́лія, Герма́нія, in America and in Egypt.

Аме́рика а Еги́петъ.

Nominative and Accusative. The brothers have bought houses, gardens, a village and Братъ купили́ домъ, садъ, дере́вня и fields, and have sold oxen, cows, horses and a carriage. по́ле, а про́дали бы́къ, коро́ва, ло́шадь f, и карѣ́та.

To read a fable, draw a picture, write letters, play an air,  
Читáть бáсня, рисо́вать картинá, писáть писѣмó, игрáть пѣсня,

mend pens. To visit the brothers and the sisters, the mothers  
чинíть перó. Посѣщáть братъ и сестрá, мáть

and the daughters, the fathers and the sons. To buy a hat  
и дочъ, о́тець и сы́нъ. Купíть шля́па

and a cap, gloves and shoes, stockings and garters.  
и ша́пка, перча́тка и башма́къ, чуло́къ и подвѣзка.

The conqueror has vanquished the troops and has subjected  
Завоева́тель побѣдилъ вóйско, и покорíлъ

the people. Peter defeated the Swedes, conquered Esthonia  
наро́дъ. Пётръ разбíлъ Шведъ, завоева́лъ Эстля́ндя

and Livonia, founded the city of Saint-Petersburg, and civilised  
и Ливля́ндя, основа́лъ го́родъ Санктпетербу́ргъ, и просвѣти́лъ

Russia. The Russians have conquered the Tartars, the Turks,  
Росси́я. Росси́янинъ побѣжда́ли Тата́ринъ, Ту́рокъ,

the Swedes, the French and the Persian. The rains refresh  
Шведъ, Францу́зъ и Перси́янинъ. Дождь *т* освѣжа́ютъ

the earth, and the frosts destroy the grass-hoppers.

земля́, и хо́лодь истребля́ютъ сара́пча (*sing.*).

Children, be attentive! John, come here! Soldiers, Vocative.

Дитя́, бу́дьте приле́жны! Ива́нъ, прійди́ сюда! Во́инъ,

fight valliantly! God, preserve the Emperor! Lord,  
сража́йтесь хра́бро! Богъ, спаси́ (*acc.*) Царь! Господь,

have mercy upon me!

помилу́й меня́!

The scholars write with a slate-pencil or with a pen and  
Учени́къ пи́шутъ гри́фель *т* или́ перó и Nominative  
and Instru-  
mental.

ink. John plays with Alexis and with Basil, and Mary  
черни́ла *л*. Ива́нъ игра́етъ съ Алексе́й и съ Васи́лій, а Ма́рья

plays with Sophia and with Amy. A tart with almonds;  
игра́етъ съ Со́фья и съ Любо́вь. Пиро́гъ съ минда́ль *т*;

pots with flowers; a basin of water; a man of wit and горшóкъ съ цвѣтъ; кáдка съ водá; человѣкъ съ умъ и of genius; a gallery of pictures. Towns with a fortress and съ рѣнiй; галерéя съ картинá. Гóродъ съ кремль *m* и a port; / trees with leaves, flowers and fruits; shakos with гáвань *f*; дѣрево съ листь, цвѣтъ и плодъ; кiверъ съ plumes; a room with doors; bread with salt; water with султáнь; кóмната съ дверь *f*; хлѣбъ съ соль *f*; водá съ wine; wine with water; professors with pupils; a letter with винó; винó съ водá; профéссоръ съ ученикъ; письмó съ money. To draw with a pencil, to paint with a brush and дѣньги *f*. Рисовáть карандашъ, писáть кистъ *f* и colours. The shop-keeper trades in tallow, in soap, in milk, крáска. Купéць торгýетъ сáло, мыло, молоко, in flour, in groats, in wines, in beer, in cloth, in linen and мукá, крупá, винó, пиво, сукно, полотно и in laces, and the neighbours of the shop-keeper trade in oxen, крúжево, а сосѣдъ купéць торгýютъ вошь, in sheep and in horses. Palaces with towers; churches with барáнь и лóшадъ *f*. Дворéць съ бáшня; цѣрковь *f* съ steeples; houses with windows; buildings with galleries, колоко́льня; домъ съ окно́; здáние съ галерéя; regiments with colours. The mountains abound in gold, полкъ съ знáмя. Горá изобiлюють зóлото, in silver, in copper, in iron, in quick-silver and in lead. серебрó, мѣдь *f*, желѣзо, ртуть *f* и свинéць.

Nominative  
and Prepo-  
sitional.

The fables of the bull and the ram, of the ass and the Бáсня о быкъ и барáнь, объ осѣль и nightingale; of the cicada and the ant; of the oak and соловей; о кузнéчикъ и муравей; о дубъ и the reed; of the fox and the crow; of the wolf and the lamb. тростникъ; о лисица и вóронъ; о волкъ и ягнѣнокъ.



The tales of the guardian-angel, of John and Mary; the  
Ска́зка объ а́нгель-хра́нитель, объ Ива́нь и Ма́рья;

histories of Sergius the hermit; of the hero and the genius.  
повѣсть о Сѣргіи́ пу́стынникѣ; о ге́роѣ и ге́ніи́.

To speak of games, of lessons, of the time, of the place, of  
Говори́тъ объ игра́, объ уро́къ, о вре́мя, о мѣ́сто, объ  
circumstances. In the work there is said a great deal about  
обсто́ятельство. Въ сочи́неніе говори́тъ мно́го о

honour and infamy, about virtue and vice, about courage  
честь и безче́стіе, о до́бродѣ́тель и поро́къ, о хра́брость

and pusillanimity. In the water live the fishes, the frogs and  
и мало́душіе. Въ вода́ живу́тъ ры́ба, лягу́шка и

the mollusca; and in the forests live the lions, the bears,  
сли́зень *m*; и въ лѣ́съ живу́тъ ле́въ, медвѣ́дь *m*,

the foxes and the hares.

лиси́ца и за́ецъ.

The books of the scholar please the master. The light The different cases.  
Кни́га учени́къ нра́вятся (*dat.*) учи́тель. Свѣ́тъ

of the sun illumines the earth with its rays. The colours of  
со́лнце оза́ряетъ зе́мля́ лу́чь. Цвѣ́тъ

the rose are agreeable to the eyes. The friends of humanity  
ро́за (*суть*) прі́ятны гла́зь. Другъ че́ловѣ́чество

do good to men. In the garden flourish roses with  
дѣ́лаютъ до́бро лю́ди. Въ (*prep.*) са́дѣ цвѣ́тутъ ро́за съ (*prep.*)

thorns; for there is no rose without thorns. The children  
шипъ; и́бо нѣ́тъ (*gen.*) ро́за безъ (*instr.*) шипъ. Де́тя

wash themselves with the water of the river. A glass of  
умы́ва́ются вода́́ рѣ́ка. Ста́канъ съ (*instr.*)

water is on the table of the room. Tears of joy glisten  
вода́ стои́тъ на (*prep.*) сто́лъ ко́мната. Сле́за ра́дость блес́тятъ

in the eyes of the mother. The glory of the wicked is  
въ (*prep.*) гла́зь ма́ть. Сла́ва зло́дѣ́й (*есть*)

without stability; but the names of the beneficent shine  
 непродолжительна; но имя благодѣтель сіяютъ  
 in eternity. Happiness on earth consists in  
 въ (*prep.*) вѣчность. Счастье на (*prep.*) землѣ состоитъ въ (*prep.*)  
 tranquillity of mind and in purity of conscience. Young people  
 спокойствіе духъ и въ чистотѣ совѣсть *f.* Юношѣ  
 love the song of the nightingale, on the bank of a river,  
 любятъ пѣніе соловей, на (*prep.*) берегъ ручей,  
 by light of the moon. To tell the truth is the duty  
 при (*prep.*) свѣтѣ лунѣ. Говорить правда есть долгъ  
 of children. To love God with heart and soul. The ants and  
 дитѣ. Любить Богъ сердце и душѣ. Муравей и  
 the beavers may serve as a pattern to man. An excursion  
 бобръ могутъ служить (*instr.*) примѣръ человекъ. Поѣздка  
 to Moscow and to Kiew. The entrance of the room  
 въ (*acc.*) Москвѣ и въ Кіевѣ. Входитъ въ (*acc.*) библіотека  
 of reading (reading-room). Give to the master the book  
 для (*gen.*) чтеніе. Подай учитель тетрадь  
 of verses on the occasion of the feast. One must rise  
 со (*instr.*) стихъ на (*acc.*) случай праздникъ. Надобно вставать  
 in the morning, work in the day, rest in the evening, and  
 (*instr.*) утро, работать день *m*, отдыхать вечеръ, и  
 sleep at night. The roar of canons and the sound of bells  
 спать ночь *f.* Громъ пушка и звонъ колоколъ  
 announced to the citizens the arrival of the conqueror  
 возвестили гражданъ о (*prep.*) прибытіе побѣдитель  
 of the enemies of the country.  
 врагъ отечество.

## THE ADJECTIVE.

32. — The *adjectives* (прилагательныя именá) Division of the adjectives. in the Russian language are of three kinds: 1) The *qualifying* (качественныя) adjectives, as: чѣрный кафтанъ, *a black coat*; тихое дитя, *a quiet child*; весёлая жизнь, *a joyous life*. 2) The *possessive* (притяжательныя) adjectives, as: отцѣвъ сынъ, *the father's son*; лисья шкура, *a fox skin*; золотое кольцо, *a gold ring*; лѣтний садъ, *the summer garden*. 3) The *numeral* (числительныя) adjectives, as: два стола, *two tables*; второй мѣсяцъ, *the second month*.

To the adjectives belong also the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative* and other pronouns, as also the *participles*, which are at times used as simple adjectives. The *Numeral* adjectives, which in Russian have their peculiar inflections, will be treated of in a separate article.

33. — The *qualifying* adjectives, or such as express the quality of an object, end in *ый* and *ій*, or, with the accent, in *ой* (neut. *ое* and *ее*, fem. *ая* and *яя*); e. g. добрый, *good*; лёгкий, *light*; синий, *blue*; сухой, *dry*; большóй, *great*. Qualifying adjectives.

34. — The *possessive* adjectives, most of which are peculiar to the Russian language, are divided into *individual*, *common*, *material* and *circumstantial*. Possessive adjectives.

1. The *individual* or *special* (личныя, частныя), possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to an individual, or in other words to an animate or personified being, end in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), or in *ь* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and are formed from the names of the objects in question by changing *ъ* and *о* into *овъ*

(or into *евѣ* after the lingual or a hissing consonant); *й* and *ь* into *евѣ*; *а*, *я* and *ь* into *инѣ*, and *ѹа* into *ѹинѣ*, remembering however that in this formation the adjective follows the genitive inflection of the substantive; e. g. *сѣиновѣ*, *the son's*; *Мѣрковѣ*, *Mark's*; *Лѣвовѣ*, *Leon's*; *Христѣовѣ*, *Christ's*; *стрѣжевѣ*, *the guardian's*; *отцѣвѣ*, *the father's*; *Андрѣевѣ*, *Andrew's*; *царѣвѣ*, *the king's*; *Никѣитинѣ*, *Nicetas's*; *дѣдинѣ*, *the uncle's*; *свекрѣовинѣ*, *mother-in-law's*; *мѣтеринѣ*, *the mother's*; *лѣвѣицынѣ*, *the girl's* (from *сынѣ*, *Мѣрко*, *Левѣ*, *gen. Лѣва*, *Христѣосѣ*, *gen. Христѣа*, *стрѣжисѣ*, *отцѣѹѣ*, *gen. отцѣа*, *Андрѣи*, *царѣ*, *Никѣита*, *дѣдѣа*, *свекрѣовѣ*, *мѣть*, *gen. мѣтери*, *дѣвѣиѹа*). The termination *ь* is only found in the adjective *Госпѣодѣнѣ*, *the Lord's* (from *Госпѣодѣ*), and in some few others in the ecclesiastical Slavonian.

To the above rule the following are exceptions: *Яковлевѣ*, *James's*; *брѣтнинѣ*, *the brother's*; *мѣжинѣ*, *the husband's*; and also *Бѣжѣи*, *God's*, formed from *Яковѣ*, *братѣ*, *мужѣ* and *Богѣ*. — We have still to remark that it is from these individual possessive adjectives that the patronymics, of which we have already spoken (§ 21), are formed; e. g. *Ивѣновичѣ* and *Ивѣновна*, *John's son and daughter*; *Пѣвловичѣ* and *Пѣвловна*, *Paul's son and daughter*; *Яковлевичѣ* and *Яковлевна*, *James's son and daughter*; *Никѣитичѣ* and *Никѣитична*, *Nicetas's son and daughter*.

2. The *common* or *generic* (*ѣбѣиѣа*, *родѣовѣа*) possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to all the individuals of the same species, have one principal termination, viz. *иѣ*, *ѣвиѣ* or *ѣвиѣ* (neut. *ѣѣ*, fem. *ѣѣа*), and some particular terminations; these are: *скѣи*, *нѣи*, *иѣи*, *ѣвиѣ*, *нѣи* (neut. *ѣѣ* and *ѣѣа*, fem. *ѣѣа* and *ѣѣа*), and are formed from the names of animate, inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *рыбѣи*, *of a fish*; *мѣдѣвѣжѣи*, *of a bear*; *птѣичѣи*, *of*

*a bird*; клопо́вий, *of a bug*; конё́вий, *of a horse*; ското́вскій, *of cattle*; гу́синый, *of a goose*; домо́вый, *domestic*; паро́вой, *of steam*; рѣ́чной, *fluvial*; ду́шевный, *of the soul*; жи́зненный, *vital*; сыно́вній, *filial* (from рѣ́ба, медвѣ́дь, пти́ца, клопъ, конь, скотъ, гусь, домъ, паръ, рѣ́ка, душа́, жизнь, сынъ).

To the individual and common possessive adjectives belong also several Russian family names; e. g. Дми́триевъ, Пу́шкинъ, Завадо́вскій, as also several names of towns and villages; e. g. Ка́шинъ, Боро́дино, Смоле́нскъ, &c.

3. The *material* (вещёственныя) possessive adjectives, which indicate the material of which a thing is made, are formed from the names of material objects by means of the terminations *ый, ный, яный, янный* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), as: золо́той, *of gold*; желе́зный, *of iron*; сере́бряный, *of silver*; дере́вьянный, *of wood* (from зо́лото, желе́зо, серебро́, дере́во).

4. The *circumstantial* (обстоя́тельствённые) possessive adjectives are formed from nouns and adverbs signifying *time* and *place*, by means of the terminations *ный* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*), and in the names of months, by the termination *скій* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*); as: ле́тний, *of summer*; ны́нѣшній, *actual*; та́мошній, *of this place*; ма́ртовскій, *of March*; ию́льскій, *of July* (from ле́то, ны́нѣ, тамъ, мартъ, ию́ль).

35. — The properties of the adjectives in Russian Properties of adjectives. are: the *gender* (родъ), the *number* (число́), the *case* (паде́жъ), the *apocope of the termination* (усть-чѣ́нiе оконча́нiя), and the *degrees of signification* or *degrees of the qualities* (сте́пени ка́чествъ), and



these properties are all marked by particular inflections.

Gender, number, case. 36. — As the adjective must agree in gender, number and case with the substantive which it qualifies, it has three terminations to indicate the difference of *gender*, two for the different *numbers* and seven for the *cases*.

Апоскоп of the termination. 37. — As the adjectives are used for two different purposes, firstly simply to qualify the noun to which they belong, as: *добрый человекъ*, a good man; *новая шляпа*, a new hat; and secondly to form the attribute of the proposition, as: *человекъ (есть) добрѣ*, the man is good; *шляпа была нова*, the hat was new; they have in Russian two different terminations, the one full (полное), the other apocopated (усѣченное). These two terminations are as follows:

SINGULAR.						
	<i>Masculine.</i>		<i>Neuter.</i>		<i>Feminine.</i>	
<i>Full term:</i>	ЫЙ (ОЙ),	ИЙ;	ОЕ,	ЕЕ;	АЯ,	ЯЯ;
<i>Апос. term:</i>	Ъ,	Ь;	О,	Е;	А,	Я;
Examples:	{ НОВЫЙ, СИНІЙ; НОВОЕ, СИНЕЕ; НОВАЯ, ОІНЯЯ; НОВЪ, СИНЬ; НОВО, СИНЁ; НОВА́, СИНЯ́;					

PLURAL.			
	Masculine.		Neut. and Fem.
Full term:	ые,	іе;	ія, ія.
Апос. term:	ы,	и;	ы, и.
Examples:	{ нѡвые, синіе; нѡвыя, синія. нѡвы, сині; нѡвы, сині.		

These two examples нѡвый, new, and синій, blue, show that the apocopated is formed from the full termination, by changing *ый* and *ій*, (or *ой* with the accent) into *ѣ* and *ѣ*, according to

the nature of the preceding consonant, for the masculine, and by cutting of the final vowel in the other inflections. In this formation, the vowel *e* or *o* is inserted between two consonants in the masculine, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, and the semi-vowels *b* and *ŭ* are changed into *e*, observing that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in the inflections of the full termination, is often transposed in the apocopated termination, sometimes to the inserted vowel of the masculine, sometimes to the first syllable, at other times to the inflection of the feminine, and occasionally to that of the neuter and the plural; e. g.

бѣлый, white, <i>афос. term.</i> бѣлъ, лѣ, лѣ.	вѣрный, true, <i>афос.</i> вѣренъ, рно, рна.
здоровый, wholesome, здоровъ, ово, ова.	тяжкій, heavy, тяжекъ, жко, жка.
дорогой, dear, дорогъ, ого, ога.	истинный, veritable, истиненъ, нно, ннна.
великій, great, великъ, йко, йка.	древній, ancient, древень, вне, вня.
дюжій, stout, дюжъ, жѣ, жѣ.	полный, full, полонъ, лно, лна.
хороший, good, хорошъ, ошѣ, ошѣ.	злой, evil, золь, зю, зла.
живой, live, живъ, йво, йвѣ.	крѣпкій, strong, крѣпокъ, пко, пка.
сухой, dry, сухъ, сѣхо, сѣха.	лёгкій, light, легокъ, гко, гка.
высокій, high, высокъ, окѣ, окѣ.	горькій, bitter, горекъ, рько, рька.
быстрый, rapid, быстръ, тро, трѣ.	сильный, vigorous, силенъ, лно, лна.
твёрдый, firm, твёрдъ, ёрдо, рдѣ.	спокойный, quiet, спокоенъ, ойно, ойна.

The following are exceptions to this rule: *достойный*, *worthy*; *блаженный*, *happy*; *надменный*, *proud*, and *совершенный*, *perfect*, which form: *достойнъ*, *ойно*, *ойна*; *блаженъ*, *надменъ*, *совершенъ*, *ённо*, *ённа*.

The qualifying adjectives have both terminations, except *радъ*, *joyous*, and *гораздъ*, *except*, which have only the apocopated, while *большой*, *great*, and *меньшой*, *little*, have only the full termination. The individual possessive adjectives have only the apocopated termination, while the material and circumstantial possessive adjectives have only the full termination. The same is the case with several common possessive adjectives, with the exception of such as end in *иѣ*, which in the singular have the full, and in the plural the apocopated termination.

38. — The qualifying adjectives have five degrees <sup>Degrees of signification.</sup> of signification, viz. the *positive*, the *comparative*, the *superlative*, the *diminutive* and the *augmentative*.

1. The *positive* (положительная стéпень) is indicated by the ordinary terminations, full and apocopated; e. g. бѣлый and бѣлъ, *white*; сухой and сухъ, *dry*; синій and синь, *blue*.

2. The *comparative* (сравнительная стéпень) is marked in the full termination by the inflections *пѣйшій, айшій, шій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated termination by the invariable inflections *пе* and *е*, and is formed in three different ways:

1) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by any consonant except a guttural, into *пѣйшій* for the full, and into *пе* for the apocopated termination; e. g.

бѣлый, white, *comp.* бѣлѣйшій and бѣлѣ, whiter.  
 слабый, weak, . . . . . слабѣйшій and слабѣ, weaker.  
 живой, live, . . . . . живѣйшій and живѣ, more live.  
 полный, full, . . . . . полнѣйшій and полнѣ, more full.

From this rule are excepted the following adjectives, which though they have the full termination *пѣйшій*, have the apocopated in *е*, changing at the same time the mutable consonant.

богатый, rich, *comp. full term.* богатѣйшій, *apoc. term.* богаче.  
 дешёвый, cheap, . . . . . дешёвѣйшій, . . . . . дешёвле.  
 густой, thick, . . . . . густѣйшій, . . . . . гуще.  
 красный, handsome, . . . . . краснѣйшій, . . . . . краше.

(No красный, *red*, forms regularly: краснѣ.)

крутой, steep, . . . . . крутѣйшій, . . . . . круче.  
 поздний, tardy, . . . . . позднѣйшій, . . . . . позже.  
 простой, simple, . . . . . простѣйшій, . . . . . проще (and простѣ).  
 твёрдый, firm, . . . . . твердѣйшій, . . . . . твёрже.  
 толстый, thick, . . . . . толстѣйшій, . . . . . толще.  
 частый, frequent, . . . . . частѣйшій, . . . . . чаще.  
 чистый, pure, . . . . . чистѣйшій, . . . . . чище.

The adjectives горячий, *burning*; лысый, *bald*; сизый, *dove-coloured*; свежий, *fresh*; and others in *зый, сый, жий, чий, ший*, have only the apocopated termination *пе*: горячѣ, лысѣ, сизѣ, свежѣ.

2) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by one of the gutturals (г, к, х), into *аѣиѣ* for the full, and into *е* for the apocopated termination, permuting the consonant at the same time; e. g.

строгій, strict, *comp.* строжайшій and стрѣже, stricter.

крѣпкій, strong, . . . крѣпчайшій and крѣпче, stronger.

вѣтхій, old, . . . вѣтшайшій and вѣтше, older.

Exceptions. — Most of the adjectives in *ѣиѣ*, *кѣиѣ*, *хѣиѣ*, have not the full termination of the comparative; and also the following adjectives form their comparatives in different ways:

долгій, long, *comp.* full term. должайшій, *apoc. term.* долѣше.

дорогой, dear, . . . дражайшій, . . . дорѣже.

далёкій and дальній, far, . . . дальнѣйшій, . . . дальше.

близкій, near, . . . ближайшій, . . . ближе.

глубокій, deep, . . . глубочайшій, . . . глубѣже.

горькій, bitter, . . . горчайшій, . . . горче.

(No горькій, *bad*, takes the Slav. inflection горшій and горше.)

короткій and краткій, short, . . . кратчайшій, . . . корѣче.

рѣдкій, rare, . . . рѣдчайшій, . . . рѣже.

сладкій, sweet, . . . сладчайшій, . . . слаще.

тонкій, thin, . . . тончайшій, . . . тоньше.

тяжкій, heavy, . . . тяжчайшій, . . . тяжче.

широкій, broad, . . . широчайшій, . . . шире.

гадкій, dirty, . . . } These five { . . . гаѣже.

гладкій, smooth, . . . } have not the { . . . глаѣже.

жидкій, liquid, . . . } full term. { . . . жѣже.

узкій, narrow, . . . } of the com- { . . . ѣже.

слабкій, slack, . . . } parative. { . . . слаѣже.

3) The inflection *ѣиѣ* for the comparative is only found in the following adjectives, three of which take their comparative from another root:

высокій, high; *comp.* full term. вышшій, *apoc. term.* выше.

молодой, young; . . . младшій, . . . молодѣе.

низкій, low; . . . низшій, . . . ниже.

старый, old; . . . старшій and старѣйшій, старше and старѣе.

худой, bad; . . . худшій, . . . хуже.

великій (and большой), great; большшій, . . . большѣе.

малый (and меньшой), little; меньшій, . . . меньше.

хороший, good; . . . лучшій, . . . лучше.

1. Care must be taken not to confound the comparative of the adjectives *дольше*, *longer*; *тоьше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *more distant*; *больше*, *greater*; *меньше*, *less*, with that of the adverbs *дольше*, *longer*; *тоьше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *further*; *больше*, *more*; *меньше*, *less*. But this difference exists only in the above five words, the comparative of the adverbs being in every other instance similar to that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination.

2. The apocopated termination of the comparative sometimes takes the preposition *но*, which softens and diminishes the force; e. g. *побѣлье*, *a little whiter*; *потоьше*, *a little finer*; *получше*, *a little better*.

3. Such adjectives as want one of the terminations of the comparative, supply its place with the adverb *больше* before the positive; e. g. *больше узкій*, *narrower*; *больше жидкій*, *more liquid*; *больше радъ*, *more joyous*; *больше гораздъ*, *more expert*.

3. The *superlative* (превосходная стѣпень) in Russian is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the four following adjectives:

*великій*, great; *compar.* *большій*; *superl.* *величайшій*, greatest.  
*высокій*, high; . . . . *высшій*; . . . . *высочайшій*, highest.  
*малый*, little; . . . . *меньшій*; . . . . *малѣйшій*, least.  
*низкій*, low; . . . . *нижшій*; . . . . *нижайшій*, lowest.

In all the other adjectives, in the full termination, the superlative is expressed by that of the comparative, the words *изъ всѣхъ*, *of all*, being understood, or the particle *най* being placed before it, or also by that of the positive, placing before it the words *самый* (*n.* *самое*, *f.* *самая*), as: *легчайшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилегчайшій* or *самый лёгкій*, *the lightest*; *лучшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилучшій*, or *самый лучшій* (improperly, for *самый хорошій*), *the best*. In the apocopated termination the superlative is the same as the comparative, adding the word *всѣхъ* or *всего*, e. g. *всѣхъ легче*, *the lightest*; *всѣхъ лучше*, *the best*; *всего важнѣе*, *the most important*; *всего труднѣе*, *the most difficult*.



4. The *diminutive* degree (уменьшительная степень) is used to mark the diminution of quality, indicating either a want or smallness of any quality in an object, or a softening of the force of the quality, and also for the agreement of the adjective with the diminutive noun; e. g. *бѣловѣтѣя чернила*, *whitish ink*; *рыжесенькая лошадка*, *a little bay horse*; *маленькая дѣвочка*, *a little young girl*. The diminutive adjective in the former case ends, in the full termination, in *овѣтый* or *евѣтый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated in *овѣтѣ* or *евѣтѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), and in the latter case, in the full termination, it ends in *онькій* and *енькій* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated, in *онекѣ* and *енекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

*бѣлый*, white; *dim.* *бѣловѣтый* or *бѣловѣтѣ*, and *бѣленькій* or *бѣленекѣ*.  
*тѣплый*, hot; . . . *тепловѣтый* or *тепловѣтѣ*, and *тѣпленькій* or *теплѣнекѣ*.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *суховѣтый* or *суховѣтѣ*, and *сѣхонькій* or *сѣхонекѣ*.  
*красный*, red; . . . *красновѣтый* or *-новѣтѣ*, and *красненькій* or *-нѣнекѣ*.  
*синій*, blue; . . . *синевѣтый* or *синевѣтѣ*, and *синенькій* or *синѣнекѣ*.  
*рыжій*, bay; . . . *рыжевѣтый* or *рыжевѣтѣ*, and *рыженькій* or *рыженекѣ*.

The diminutive ending *овѣтый*, *евѣтый*, must not be confounded with the similar ending of the positive, which belongs to the qualifying adjectives; e. g. *виновѣтый*, *culpable*; *угловѣтый*, *angular*; *поздравѣтый*, *porous*; *угревѣтый*, *scaly*.

5. The *augmentative* degree (увеличительная степень) is used in the qualifying adjectives to express the abundance or excess of quality, and is formed in the full termination by the prepositive particle *пре*, and in the apocopated by the endings *ѣхонекѣ* and *ѣшенекѣ*, or *оѣхонекѣ* and *оѣшенекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

*бѣлый*, white; *augm.* *пребѣлый*, or *бѣлѣхонекѣ* and *бѣлѣшенекѣ*, quite white.  
*сухой*, dry; . . . *пресухой*, or *сухѣхонекѣ* and *сухѣшенекѣ*, very dry.  
*лѣгкій*, light; . . . *прелѣгкій*, or *лѣгѣхонекѣ* and *лѣгѣшенекѣ*, very light.  
*малый*, little; . . . *премалый*, or *малѣхонекѣ* and *малѣшенекѣ*, very little.

## DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

FIRST.												
FULL TERMINATION.												
CASSES: . . . . .												
NUMBERS: . . . . .												
SINGULAR.												
CASSES: . . . . .	Masc. gender.			Neut. gender.			Fem. gender.					
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
PLURAL.												
CASSES: . . . . .	Masc. gender.			Neut. and feminine genders.								
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		

SECOND.												
APOCOPATED TERMINATION.												
CASSES: . . . . .												
NUMBERS: . . . . .												
SINGULAR.												
CASSES: . . . . .	Masc. gender.			Neut. gender.			Fem. gender.					
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
PLURAL.												
CASSES: . . . . .	Masc. gender.			Neut. and feminine genders.								
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		

THIRD.												
MIXED TERMINATION.												
CASSES: . . . . .												
NUMBERS: . . . . .												
SINGULAR.												
CASSES: . . . . .	Masc. g.			Neut. g.			Fem. g.					
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
PLURAL.												
CASSES: . . . . .	Masc. g.			Neut. g.			Fem. g.					
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		
	N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.			N. or G.		
	like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.			like the N. or G.		

The adjective прекрасный, *beautiful*, in which the particle *пре* has an augmentative meaning, is used as a simple adjective to be distinguished from красный, *red*; but it is not the same case with прелестный, *charming*, derivated from прелесть, *charm*.

39. — The Russian adjectives have three *declensions*; the *first* for adjectives of the *full termination*, the *second* for those of the *apocopated*, and the *third* for those of the *mixed termination*, i. e. for such common possessive adjectives in *ий* (neut. *е*, fem. *ья*), as have some inflections of the full and others of the apocopated termination. Each of these declensions has three endings for three genders, masculine, feminine and neuter, corresponding to the three declensions of substantives, as is seen in the opposite table.

Declension  
of adjectives.

In declining adjectives according to this table, attention is required to the following observations:

1. The inflection *ой* of the *nominative* singular masculine, instead of *ый*, or of *ий* preceded by a guttural or a hissing consonant, is only used when the accent is on the last syllable; e. g. слѣпой, *blind*; восковой, *of wax*; глухой, *deaf*; чужой, *foreign*; большой, *great* (instead of *слѣпый, восковый, глухий, чужій, большій*).

2. The inflection *ья* or *ія* of the *genitive* singular feminine is Slavonian, and is only used in poetry, or in religious prose; e. g. крѣтость святѣя жизни, *the sweetness of a holy life*; Соборъ Казанскіа Божіа Матери, *the Cathedral of Our-Lady of Casan*.

3. The inflection *ей*, *ей* or *еѣ* of the *instrumental* singular feminine is a contraction of *ою*, *ею* or *еѣю* in use in familiar language.

4. The inflection *ъ*, of the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter of the II declension, is confined to the names of families and towns, and the inflection *омъ* to the individual possessive adjectives, and to the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination. (See Paradigms 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.)

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE

## SINGU

*Masculine and neuter genders.*

DECLENSIONS:	TERMINATIONS:	PARADIGMS:							
			<i>Nomin. and Vocative.</i>	<i>Genitive.</i>	<i>Dative.</i>	<i>Accus.</i>	<i>Instr.</i>	<i>Prep.</i>	
FIRST.	FULL.	1.	<i>м.</i> нѡвый, new . . . . .	нѡв-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> нѡвое . . . . .						
		2.	<i>м.</i> мѡгкій, tender . . . . .	мѡгк-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> мѡгкое . . . . .						
		3.	<i>м.</i> сѣній, blue . . . . .	сѣн-аго . . . . .	ему . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> сѣнее . . . . .						
		4.	<i>м.</i> свѣжій, fresh . . . . .	свѣж-аго . . . . .	ему . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> свѣжее . . . . .						
SECOND.	APOCOPATED.	5.	(Графъ) Толстой . . . . .	Толст-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
		6.	<i>м.</i> портной, a tailor . . . . .	портн-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
		7.	<i>н.</i> жаркое, a roast . . . . .	жарк-аго . . . . .	ому . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
		8.	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .	
		9.	<i>м.</i> царѣвъ, the king's . . . . .	царѣв-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> царѣво . . . . .						
		10.	<i>м.</i> бѣлъ, white . . . . .	бѣл-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> бѣло . . . . .						
THIRD.	MIXED.	11.	(Князь) Репнинъ . . . . .	Репнин-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
		12.	(городъ) Кашинъ . . . . .	Кашин-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
		13.	(село) Бородино . . . . .	Бородин-а . . . . .	у . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	омъ . . . . .	
		14.	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .	
		15.	<i>м.</i> Господень, the Lord's . . . . .	Господн-я . . . . .	ю . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> Господне . . . . .						
		16.	<i>м.</i> синъ, blue . . . . .	син-я . . . . .	ю . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> синѣ . . . . .						
		17.	<i>м.</i> рыбій, of fish . . . . .	рыб-ьяго . . . . .	ьему . . . . .		ымъ . . . . .	емъ . . . . .	
			<i>н.</i> рыбье . . . . .						

The following observations, relative to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the adjectives, are important:

1. All the inflections of the full and of the mixed termination, i. e. in the 1st and 3rd declension, retain the accentuation of the nominative singular masculine.

2. In the apocopated termination, i. e. in the 2nd declension, the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the nominative feminine, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural. The oblique cases of the apocopated termination either retain the accentuation of the nominative, or transfer the accent to the last syllable.

## DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

L A R.		P L U R A L.	
Feminine gender.		For the three genders.	
N. and V. G. D. and P. Acc. Instr.		Nom. and Voc. Gen. and Pr. Dat. Accus. Instr.	
но́в-ая . . . ой . . ую . . ою .		m. но́в-ые . . . n. f. но́в-ья . . . } . . ыхъ . . . ымъ . . ымь	
ма́гк-ая . . . ой . . ую . . ою .		m. ма́гк-іе . . . n. f. ма́гк-ія . . . } . . ихъ . . . ымъ . . ымь	
си́н-яя . . . ей . . юю . . ею .		m. си́н-іе . . . n. f. си́н-ія . . . } . . ихъ . . . ымъ . . ымь	
свѣ́ж-ая . . . ей . . ую . . ею . (Гра́финя)		m. свѣ́ж-іе . . . n. f. свѣ́ж-ія . . . } . . ихъ . . . ымъ . . ымь	
Толст-ая . . ой . . у́ю . . о́ю .		(Гра́фы) Толст-ые . ыхъ . . ́ымъ . . ́ымь	
. . . . .		. . . портн-ые . . . ыхъ . . . ́ымъ . . ́ымь	
. . . . .		. . . жарк-ія . . . ́ыхъ . . . ́ымъ . . ́ымь	
кладов-а́я . . ой . . у́ю . . о́ю . a storehouse.		. . . кладов-ы́я . . . ́ыхъ . . . ́ымъ . . ́ымь	
ца́рєв-а . . . ой . . у . . . ою .		. . . ца́рєв-ы . . . ыхъ . . . ымъ . . ымь	
бѣ́л-а́ . . . ой . . у́ . . . о́ю . (Кня́зья)		. . . бѣ́л-ы́ . . . ыхъ . . . ́ымъ . . ́ымь	
Репни́-а́ . . ой . . у́ . . . о́ю . (дерѣ́вья)		(Кня́зья) Репни́-ы́ . ́ыхъ . . ́ымъ . . ́ымь	
. . . . .		. . . . .	
Му́рин-а . . ой . . у . . . ою .		. . . . .	
Госпо́дн-я . . ей . . ю . . . ою .		. . . Госпо́дн-и . . . ихъ . . . ымъ . . ымь	
. . . . .		. . . . .	
си́н-я́ . . . . . ей . . ю . . . е́ю .		. . . си́н-и́ . . . . . ́ыхъ . . . ́ымъ . . ́ымь	
. . . . .		. . . . .	
ры́б-ья . . . . . ъей . . . ъю . . . ъею		. . . ры́б-ьн . . . . . ьихъ . . . ьымъ . . ьымь	

like

{the Nominative, with the names of inanimate beings.  
the Genitive, with the names of animate beings.

the *Nominative*, with the names of inanimate beings.  
the *Genitive*, with the names of animate beings.

like

The *accusative masculine*, singular and plural, of the adjectives is like the *nominative*, when the noun, which they qualify, designates an inanimate or abstract object, as is also the case with the substantives; and it is like the *genitive*, when the noun designates an animate being, even when the accusative of the noun in question may not happen to be the same as the genitive, as is the case with the masculine substantives of the IIIrd declension; ехъ мы́ люби́мъ вѣ́рнаго слугу́, *we love the faithful servant*; мы́ люби́мъ вѣ́рныхъ слугу́, *we love the faithful servants*.



5. The apocopated termination of the adjectives is often used instead of the full in poetry, for the sake of the rhythm; e. g. *пушѣсты* и́пен (instead of *пушѣстые*), *thick hoarfrost*; *бѣстры* воды (instead of *бѣстрыя*), *rapid waters*; *добрѣ* молодѣу (instead of *добрѣму*), *to the good young man*; *сырѣ* зѣмлю (instead of *сырѣю*), *the moist earth*.

6. The inflection *іе, ія, іяго*, &c. of the common possessive adjectives is used in an elevated style, and *ѣе, ѣя, ѣяго*, &c. in familiar language.

7. As the *vocative* of the adjectives is always the same as the nominative, it has been omitted in the table of the declensions.

Paradigms  
of the de-  
clensions of  
adjectives.

40. — With due attention to the above remarks all the adjectives of the Russian language can be declined according to the 17 paradigms. (See p. 76sq.)

First  
declension.

According to the 1st paradigm (но́вый) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ый*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *овый, евый, ный, иный*; 3) all the material possessive adjectives; 4) the diminutive adjectives in *оватый* and *еватый*; remarking that the termination *ый* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

1) Дóбрый, good, *н.* дóброе, *ф.* дóбрая.

Сѣ́льный, vigorous, сѣ́льное, сѣ́ль-  
ная.

Стáрый, old, стáрое, стáрая.

Чѣ́рный, black, чѣ́рное, чѣ́рная.

Кра́сный, red, кра́сное, кра́сная.

Бѣ́лый, white, бѣ́лое, бѣ́лая.

У́мный, wise, у́мное, у́мная.

Гру́бый, coarse, гру́бое, гру́бая.

По́лный, full, по́льное, по́льная.

Нѣ́жный, tender, нѣ́жное, нѣ́жная.

Слѣ́пой, blind, слѣ́пое, слѣ́пая.

Простóй, simple, простóе, простáя.

Худóй, bad, худóе, худáя.

Нѣ́мой, dumb, нѣ́мое, нѣ́мая.

2) Бóбрый, of beaver, *н.* бóбрóвое,  
*ф.* -бóвая.

Ежéвый, of hedgehog, ежéвое,  
ежéвая.

Пчелѣ́ный, of bee, пчелѣ́ное, пчелѣ́-  
ли́ная.

Дорóжный, of road, дорóжное,  
дорóжная.

Носóвой, of the nose, носóвое, носó-  
вáя.

3) Золотóй, of gold, золотóе, золотáя.  
Желѣ́зный, of iron, желѣ́зное,  
желѣ́зная.

Мáсляный, of oil, мáсляное, мá-  
сля́ная.

Кóжанный, of leather, кóжаное,  
кóжаная.

Деревя́нный, of wood, деревя́нное,  
-вя́нная.

4) Бѣ́ловáтый, whitish, бѣ́ловáтое,  
-вáтая.

Красновáтый, reddish, красно-  
вáтое, -тая.

Синевáтый, bluish, синевáтое, синевá-  
тая.

Рыжевáтый, ruddy, рыжевáтое,  
-вáтая.

According to the 2nd paradigm (мягкій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ий*, *кій*, *хій*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *скій* and *цкій*; 3) the diminutive adjectives in *енькій* and *онькій*; the termination *ий* when accented being also changed into *ой*. Such are:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1) Лёгкій, light, <i>н.</i> лёгкое, <i>ф.</i> лёгкая. | Господскій, seigneurial, <i>н.</i> господское, <i>ф.</i> господская. |
| Строгий, strict, строгое, строгая.                    | Русскій, Russian, русское, русская.                                  |
| Кроткій, kind, кроткое, кроткая.                      | Нѣмецкій, German, нѣмецкое, нѣмецкая.                                |
| Великій, great, великое, великая.                     | Людскій, men's, людское, людская.                                    |
| Упругій, elastic, упругое, упругая.                   | Городскій, of a town, городское, городская.                          |
| Горькій, bitter, горькое, горькая.                    | 3) Маленькій, little, маленькое, -кая.                               |
| Вѣтхій, old, вѣтхое, вѣтхая.                          | Бѣленькій, whitish, бѣленькое, бѣленькая.                            |
| Дорогой, dear, дорогое, дорогая.                      | Лёгонькій, lightish, лёгонькое, -кая.                                |
| Сухой, dry, сухое, сухая.                             |  |
| Глухой, deaf, глухое, глухая.                         |  |
| 2) Звѣрскій, bestial, звѣрское, -ская.                |  |
| Жѣнскій, feminine, жѣнское, жѣнская.                  |  |

According to the 3rd paradigm (сѣній) are declined the adjectives: 1) qualifying, 2) circumstantial possessive, and 3) some common possessive, in *ній* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); such are:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1) Древній, ancient, <i>н.</i> древнее, <i>ф.</i> древняя. [близняя. | Здѣшній, of here, <i>н.</i> здѣшнее, <i>ф.</i> здѣшняя. |
| Ближній, neighbour, ближнее,   | Нынѣшній, actual, нынѣшнее, -нѣшняя.                    |
| Дальній, distant, дальнее, дальняя.                                  | Зимній, hybernal, зимнее, зимняя.                       |
| Искренній, sincere, искреннее, искренняя.                            | Весенній, vernal, весеннее, -няя.                       |
| Игрёній, light-sorrel, игрёнее, игрёняя.                             | Лѣтній, estival, лѣтнее, лѣтняя.                        |
| Поробжій, empty, поробжее, поробжняя.                                | Осенній, autumnal, осеннее, осенняя.                    |
| Поздній, tardy, позднее, поздняя.                                    | Прѣжній, precedent, прѣжнее, -жняя.                     |
| Ранній, early, раннее, ранняя.                                       | Послѣдній, last, послѣднее, -дняя.                      |
| 2) Вчерашній, yesterday's, вчерашнее, -шняя.                         | 3) Мужній, marital, мужнее, мужняя.                     |
| Вечерній, evening's, вечернее, вечерняя.                             | Дружній, friend's, дружнее, дружная.                    |
| Утренній, morning's, утреннее, утренняя.                             | Сынóвній, filial, сынóвное, сынóвная.                   |

According to the 4th paradigm (свѣжій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *жій*, *чій*, *шій* and *щій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*); 2) all the comparatives and superlatives in the full termination; observing that the ending *ій* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1) Дю́жий, robust, <i>н.</i> дю́жее, <i>ф.</i> дю́жая. | Чужо́й, foreign, <i>н.</i> чужо́е, <i>ф.</i> чужа́я |
| Горя́чий, hot, горя́чее, горя́чая.                     | О́бщій, common, о́бщее, о́бщая.                     |
| Кипя́чий, boiling, кипя́чее, -чая.                     | Ни́щій, poor, ни́щее, ни́щая.                       |
| Хоро́ший, good, хоро́шее, хоро́шая.                    | 2) Большо́й, greater, большо́е, большо́-            |
| Большо́й, great, большо́е, большо́я.                   | шая.  |
| Похо́жий, resembling, похо́жее, -жая.                  | Лу́чший, better, лу́чшее, лу́чая.                   |
| Приго́жий, pretty, приго́жее, приго́жая.               | ме́нший, least, ме́ньшее, ме́ньшая.                 |
|  | Не́жний, more tender, -е́йшее, -шая.                |

According to the 5th paradigm (Толсто́й) are declined family names in *ый* and *ий*, or in *ой* with the accent (fem. *ая*); the vowel *ы* being changed into *и* after a guttural. Such are:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| Смирно́й, Smirnói, <i>ф.</i> Смирна́я. | Трубецко́й, Troobetzkói, <i>ф.</i> Трубецка́я. |
| Полево́й, Polaivói, Полева́я.           | Завадо́вский, Zavadovski, Завадо́вская.         |
| Наре́жный, Naraizhni, Наре́жная.        | Жуко́вский, Zhookovski, Жуко́вская.             |
| Брани́цкий, Branitzki, Брани́цкая.      | Меще́рский, Mestcherski, Меще́рская.            |
| Бобринскі́й, Bobrinski, Во́бринская.    |   |
| Долгору́кий, Dolgorooki, Долгору́кая.   |   |

Such family names as are formed from the genitive, as: Мертва́го, *Mertvaho*; Парена́го, *Parenaho*; Сухи́хъ, *Sookhikh*, Наги́хъ, *Naghikh*, are indeclinable.

According to the 6th, 7th and 8th paradigm (портной, жарко́е, кладова́я) are declined some masculine neuter and feminine nouns, which are in fact only adjectives used as substantives, remembering to change *о* into *е* and *ы* into *и* after a guttural or a hissing consonant. Such are:

- |                          |                                   |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1) Вы́борный, a deputy.  | 2) Животное, an animal.           |
| Вѣстово́й, a messenger.  | Моро́женое, ice-creams.           |
| Кормчи́й, the pilot.     | Насе́комое, an insect.            |
| Часово́й, a sentry.      | 3) Вселе́нная, the universe.      |
| Мастерово́й, an artisan. | Гости́ная, a drawing-room.        |
| Подья́чий, a clerk.      | Набере́жная, a quay.              |
| Прохо́жий, a passenger.  | Черте́жная, room for the drawers. |
| Пѣвчи́й, a chanter.      | Передняя́, an antechamber.        |

Second declension.

According to the 9th paradigm (царе́въ) are declined the individual possessive adjectives in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*). Such are:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| Сыно́въ, son's, <i>н.</i> сыно́во, <i>ф.</i> сыно́ва. | Христо́въ, Christ's, <i>н.</i> Христо́во, <i>ф.</i> Христо́ва. |
| Петро́въ, Peter's, Петро́во, Петро́ва.                |  |
| Отце́въ, father's, отце́во, отце́ва.                  | Ма́теринъ, mother's, ма́терино, -рина.                         |
| Геро́евъ, hero's, геро́ево, геро́ева.                 | До́черинъ, daughter's, до́черино, до́черина.                   |
| Па́вловъ, Paul's, Па́влово, Па́влова.                 |  |

Никѣтинъ, Nicetas's, *n.* Никѣтино, *f.* Царѣцынъ, the queen's, *n.* царѣцыно,  
 Никѣтина. *f.* -цына. [-цына.  
 Ильинъ, Elias's, Ильино, Ильина. Дѣвицынъ, the girl's, дѣвицыно,

The adjective Христовъ takes in the prepositional singular the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омѣ*) in the phrase: по Рождествѣ Христовѣ (instead of Христовомѣ), after the Birth of Christ.

According to the 10th paradigm (бѣлъ) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination in *ѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), with the exception of those in *мѣ*, *чѣ*, *шѣ* and *щѣ*, which belong to the 16th paradigm, remembering to change *ѣ* into *и* after the gutturals (*з*, *к*, *х*), and remarking that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in all the inflections of the full termination, is often transferred, in the apocopated, to the last syllable, sometimes in the feminine only, and at other times also in the neuter and plural. Such are:

Радъ, joyous, <i>n.</i> радо, <i>f.</i> рада; <i>pl.</i> рады.	Высокъ, high, <i>n.</i> высоко, <i>f.</i> высока; <i>pl.</i> высокѣ.
Гораздъ, expert, -до, -да; горазды.	Силѣнъ, vigorous, силно, свѣла; силны.
Новъ, new, ново, нова; новы.	Умѣнъ, wise, умно, умна; умны.
Слабъ, weak, слабо, слаба; слабы.	Тѣплъ, hot, тепло, тепла; теплы.
Цѣлъ, entire, цѣло, цѣла; цѣлы.	Легокъ, light, легко, легка; легки.
Великъ, great, велико, велика; велики.	Добръ, good, добро, добра; добры.
Сухъ, dry, сухо, суха; сухи.	Жѣлтъ, jellow, желто, желта; желты.
Крѣпокъ, strong, крѣпко, крѣпка; крѣпки.	Боленъ, sick, больно, больна; больны.

According to the 11th paradigm (Репнинъ) are declined family names in *овѣ*, *евѣ*, *инѣ* and *ынѣ* (fem. *а*), which take in the prepositional singular masculine the inflexion *ѣ* (instead of *омѣ*). Such are:

Суворовъ, Suovorof, <i>f.</i> Суворова.	Дмитріевъ, Dmitrief, <i>f.</i> Дмитріева.
Кутузовъ, Kootoosof, Кутузова.	Гурьевъ, Goorief, Гурьева.
Ломоносовъ, Lomonossof, Ломоносова.	Васильевъ, Vassilief, Васильева.
Строгановъ, Stroganof, Строганова.	Державинъ, Derzhavin, Державина.
Крыловъ, Krylof, Крылова.	Карамзинъ, Karamzin, Карамзина.
Шипковъ, Shishkof, Шипкова.	Княжнинъ, Kniazhnin, Княжнина.
Херасковъ, Kheraskof, Хераскова.	Пушкинъ, Pooshkin, Пушкина.
Орловъ, Orlof, Орлова.	Потёмкинъ, Potiomkin, Потёмкина.
	Голицынъ, Golitzin, Голицына.

Foreign family names, such as: Базедовъ, *Basedow*; Канкринъ, *Cancrin*, are declined like the substantives, and, having no feminine, are indeclinable when referring to females. The same



remark applies equally to Russian family names ending in *вичъ*; but sometimes in feminine they take the termination *вичева*, which then is declined as an adjective; e. g. у Графини *Канкринъ*, at the Countess *Cancrin*; у Госпожи *Максимовичъ* or *Максимовичевой*, at Madame *Maximovitch*.

According to the 12th, 13th and 14th paradigms (*Кáшинъ*, *Бородинó*, *Мýрина*) are declined such names of towns, boroughs and villages, as end in the masculine in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ*; in the neuter in *овó*, *евó*, *инó*, *ынó*, and in the feminine in *ова*, *ева*, *ина*, *ына*, which take also in the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

- |                      |                       |                       |
|----------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| 1) ( <i>городъ</i> ) | Борисовъ, Borissof.   | Царѣцyno, Tzaritzino. |
|                      | Могилѣвъ, Mohilef.    | Останкино, Ostankino. |
|                      | Алѣксинъ, Alexin.     | 3) ( <i>деревня</i> ) |
|                      | Козловъ, Kozlof.      | Пáрголова, Pargolova. |
| 2) ( <i>селó</i> )   | Тарутино, Tarootino.  | Краскóва, Kraskova.   |
|                      | Измайлово, Izmailovo. | Леташёва, Letachova.  |
|                      |                       | Валúтина, Valootina.  |

Exceptions to this rule are the names of the following towns: *Кіевъ*, *Kief*; *Псковъ*, *Pleskow*; *Хáрьковъ*, *Charkof*; *Гдовъ*, *Gdof*; *Ростóвъ*, *Rostof*; *Орлóвъ*, *Orlof*; as also the names of foreign towns, e. g. *Берли́нъ*, *Berlin*, which are declined like substantives, having in the *instrumental* singular the inflection *омъ* (and not *ымъ*). The same is the case with the names of towns in *скъ*, *цкъ* and *ь*; as: *Смоленскъ*, *Smolensk*; *Пóлоцкъ*, *Polotsk*; *Ярослáвъ*, *Yaroslavl*, &c.

In such names of towns as are formed of *новъ* and *бѣло*, as: *Нóвгородъ*, *Nougorod*; *Бѣлоóзеро*, *Bieloozero*, both the adjective and substantive are declined: *G.* *Новагóрода*, *Бѣлаóзера*; *D.* *Новугóроду*, *Бѣлуóзеру*; *I.* *Новымъ-гóродомъ*, *Бѣлымъ-óзеромъ*; *P.* о *Новѣгóродѣ*, *Бѣлѣóзерѣ* (taking also the inflection *ѣ* instead of *омъ*).

According to the 15th paradigm (*Госпóдень*) is declined the individual possessive adjective:

Бóжій, of God, *n.* Бóжіе, *f.* Бóжіа; *pl.* Бóжїи, which must not be confounded with the common possessive adjective бóжескій, *divine, relating to the attributes of God*. The adjective Бóжій takes also the inflections of mixed termination, as in Бóжье дéрево, *southern wood* (a plant); Бóжья корóвка, *cochineal, the lady-bird*; *G.* Бóжьяго дéрева, Бóжьей корóвки, *D.* Бóжьему дéреву, &c.



According to the 16th paradigm (синь) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination ending in *ь* or *ъ* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and also those in *жсѣ*, *чсѣ*, *шсѣ*, *щсѣ* (neut. *е*, fem. *а*), remembering to change *я* into *а* and *ю* into *у* after the hissings (ж, ч, ш, щ). Such are:

Дрэвень, ancient, *н. дрэвне, ф. дрэвня*. Свѣжъ, fresh, *н. свѣжѣ, ф. свѣжя*.  
 Искренень, sincere, искренне, -ення. Рыжъ, caroty, рыже, рыжя.  
 Порожень, empty, порожне, порожня. Горячъ, burning, горячо, горяча.  
 Дюжъ, robust, дюже, дюжя. Хорошъ, good, хорошо, хороша.  
 Похожъ, semblable, похोजе, похोजа. Тощъ, fasting, тоще, тоща.

According to the 17th paradigm (рыбий) are declined the common possessive adjectives in *ий*, *овий*, *евий* (neut. *е*, fem. *ья*), which are formed from the specific names of animals; e. g. Third declension.

Олений, of deer, <i>н. олене, ф. оленья</i> .	Птичий, of bird, <i>н. птиче, ф. птичья</i> .
Собольий, of sable, соболье, соболья.	Птѣуший, of cock, птѣуше, птѣушья.
Козий, of goat, козье, козья.	Верблюжий, of camel, верблюжье, -жья.
Коровий, of cow, коровье, коровья.	Лебяжий, of swan, лебяжье, лебяжья.
Овечий, of sheep, овечье, овечья.	Волвий, of ox, воловье, воловья.
Медвѣжий, of bear, медвѣжье, медвѣжья.	Коневий, of horse, коневье, коневья.
Бараний, of ram, баранье, баранья.	Мушій, of fly, муше, мушья.
Говяжий, of ox, говяжье, говяжья.	Телячий, of calf, теляче, телячья.
Слоновий, of elephant, слоновье, -ья.	Клоповий, of bug, клоповье, клоповья.
Сомовий, of silurus, сомовье, сомовья.	Волчий, of wolf, волче, волчья.
Лисий, of fox, лисье, лисья.	Человѣчий, of man, человѣче, -вѣчья.

The possessive adjective *человѣчий* is used when applied to man as an animal, and the adjective *человѣческий* (*н. ое, ф. ая*) to man as an intelligent being.

### EXERCISES ON THE ADJECTIVES.

It is necessary to observe preliminarily that according to the rules of construction in the Russian language the adjective is usually placed before the substantive, when it does not form the attribute of the proposition; and that the verb *to be* is commonly understood in the present.

An empty pocket; the pocket is empty. A strong castle; Apocope of the termination.  
 Пустой карманъ; (есть) . Крепкій замокъ;  
 the castle is strong. A faithful servant; the servant has been  
 Вѣрный слуга; былъ

faithful. The soft wax; the wax is soft. A quiet sleep; the  
 . Мягкій воскъ; . Спокойный сонъ;

sleep is quiet. A worthy son; the son is worthy. A true  
 . Достойный сынъ; . Истинный

friend; the friend is true. Perfect repose; the repose  
 другъ; . Совершенный покой;

will be perfect. A transparent glass; the glass is transparent.  
 будетъ . Прозрачный стеклѣ;

An ancient tradition; the tradition was ancient. A hot summer;  
 Древній преданіе; было . Тёплый лѣто;

the summer will be hot. A blunt pen; the pen is blunt.  
 будетъ . Тупой перѣ;

An old hut; the hut is old. A blue paper; the paper is  
 Вѣтхій хижина; . Синій бумага;

blue. New houses; the houses are new. Rich families;  
 . Новый домъ; (суть) . Богатый семья;

the families were rich. Red ensigns; the ensigns will be red.  
 были . Красный знамя; будутъ .

Degrees of White paper; whiter paper; the whitest paper. The Neva  
 signification. Бѣлый бумага; . Невá

is rapid, and the Volga is more rapid. The milk is  
 (есть) быстрый, а Волга . Молоко

liquid, and the water is more liquid. A deep brook; a deeper  
 жидкій, а вода . Глубокій ручей;

river. The houses are high, and the towers are higher.  
 рѣка. Домъ (суть) высокій, а башня .

Good tea; better tea; the best tea. The dogs are little;  
 Хорошій чай; . Собака малый;

the cats are less; but the mice are the least. The father is  
 кошка ; но мышь . Отецъ

young; the mother is younger; but the sister is the youngest.  
 молодѣй; мать ; но сестра .

The hay is dear, and the straw is dearer. Milk is sweet;

Сѣно дорогѣй, а солома . Молоко сладкій;

sugar is sweeter; but honey is the sweetest of all.

сахаръ ; но мѣдъ .

Some whitish paper; some reddish ink; some blackish

Бѣлый бумага; бѣлый чернила *pl*; чѣрный

water; the colour is bluish. A little red cow; a little pony;

вода; краска (*есть*) синій. Бѣлый коровка; малый лоша́дка;

a little piebald horse; a poor little girl; the grey-headed

пѣгій лоша́дка; бѣдный дѣвочка; старичёкъ

man is very old; the little old woman is very good. Very white

(*есть*) ста́рый; стару́шка до́брый. Бѣлый

paper; the paper is very white; very dry wood; the wood

бума́га; ; сухой́ дрова́ *pl*;

is very dry.

The master of the large gardens, and the mistress of the new Declension of the full termination.

Хозяи́нъ обши́рный садъ, и хозяйка́ но́вый

house. A glass of good water and of red wine; whole

домъ. Стака́нъ хоро́шій вода́ и краси́вый вино́; цѣ́лый

pots of pork-fat and of fir-resin. Do good

горшо́къ свиной́ са́ло и ело́вый смо́ла. Дѣла́й (*acc.*) до́бро

to poor children and to infirm old men, and do not go

бѣ́дный дитя́ и дря́хлый́ стари́къ, и не ходи́

into the fields of others. This is the house of the Prince

по (*dat.*) по́ле чужо́й. Вотъ (*nom.*) домъ́ Кня́зь

Dolgoruki, that is the palace of the Countess Tolstoi, and

Долгору́кий, вотъ́ дворе́ць Графи́ня Толсто́й, а

there are the large gardens of the young Counts Zavodovski.

вотъ́ обши́рный садъ́ молодо́й Графъ́ Завадо́вский.

I have admired the agreeable song of the nightingale of last year.

Я диви́лся (*dat.*) прі́ятный́ пѣ́ніе соловей́ прошлoгóдний.

To cut a swan's quill with a blunt penknife. There are  
 Чинить (*acc.*) лебединый перо тупой ножикъ. Вотъ (*nom.*)  
 some goose quills, some red crayons, some thick blank books,  
 гусиный перо, красный карандашъ, толстый тетрадь *f*,  
 some oak-rulers, and great mathematical compasses, and here  
 дубовый линейка, и большой циркуль *m*, а вотъ  
 are some woollen clothes, some silk stockings, some beaver hats,  
 суконный кафтанъ, шелковый чулокъ, пуховый шляпа,  
 fine linen, and still finer lace. Love good  
 тонкий полотно и тончайший кружево. Люби (*acc.*) непорочный  
 morals; read useful books; honour old people;  
 нравъ; читай (*acc.*) полезный книга; чтй (*acc.*) старый люди *pl*;  
 praise good actions; keep the honest and faithful  
 хвали (*acc.*) добрый дѣлю; береги (*acc.*) честный и верный  
 servant. Give the new book to the most attentive  
 слуга. Подари (*acc.*) новый книга (*dat.*) самый прилежный  
 scholar. You praise the weather of spring, the splendour  
 ученикъ. Ты хвалишь (*acc.*) погода весенний, ясность *f*  
 of the summer nights, the coolness of autumn, and the colds  
 лѣтний ночь *f*, прохлада осенний и холодъ  
 of winter. I esteem the celebrated men, and the illustrious  
 зимний. Я уважаю (*acc.*) славный мужъ и знаменитый  
 commanders of ancient times. The great military manoeuvres of  
 полковóдецъ древний время. Большой манёвръ въ (*prep.*)  
 this year will take place at Kransnoe Selo, and on the  
 нынѣшний годъ будутъ въ (*prep.*) Красное Село и на (*prep.*)  
 mountain of Douderhof.  
 Гора Дудергофскій.

Declension  
 of the apo-  
 copated ter-  
 mination.

He has left the house of his father, and he does  
 Онъ выѣхалъ изъ (*gen.*) домъ отцевъ, и дѣлаетъ (*acc.*)  
 good to the daughter of his sister. He has sold the property  
 добро (*dat.*) дочь *f* сестринъ. Онъ продалъ (*acc.*) имѣние

of his wife to the son of his brother. To visit the temples of  
 женинъ (*dat.*) сынъ братнинъ. Посещать (*acc.*) храмъ  
 the Lord and the churches of God. To resign one's self to  
 Господень и церковь Божій. Повиноваться (*dat.*)

the will of the Lord, and to acknowledge the majesty of the  
 боля Господень, и познавать (*acc.*) величество

name of God. The first Russian Grammar was written by  
 имя Божій. Первый Русскій Грамматика была написана (*instr.*)

the immortal Lomonossof, and the History of Russia by  
 безсмертный Ломоносовъ, и Исторія Россійскій (*instr.*)

Nicholas Mikhaïlovitch Karamzin. The battles against the  
 Николай Михайловичъ Карамзинъ. Сраженіе съ (*instr.*)

French were fought near Borodino and Borissouf.  
 Французъ происходили подъ (*instr.*) Бородино и подъ Борисовъ.

I have lived at Novgorod and at Bieloozero. The villages  
 Я живалъ въ (*prep.*) Новгородъ и въ Белоозеро. Деревня

of the Princess Saltykof are situated near the town of Kashin.

Княгиня Салтыковъ лежатъ подъ (*instr.*) городъ Кашинъ.

There is a cloak of fox-skin, a sable- cap, a bird- nest, Declension  
 Вотъ (*nom.*) шуба лисій, соболій шапка, птицій гнѣздо, of the mixed  
 termination

some hare- skins, and some elephant's teeth. A rood of deer-  
 заячій мехъ и слоновій зубъ. Пудъ олений

flesh, a yard of ox- skin, and a pound of calf's brains. Do  
 мясо, аршинъ воловій кожа, и фунтъ телячій мозгъ. Не

not go on the track of a wolf, and do not enter into the den  
 ходи по (*dat.*) слѣдъ волчій, и не входи въ (*acc.*) берлогу

of the bear. A dissertation on the man's eye, and on the  
 медвѣжій. Разсужденіе о (*prep.*) человѣчій глазъ, и о

fish- head. He deals in isinglass, in ox- fat,  
 рыбій голова. Онъ торгуетъ (*instr.*) рыбій клей, бычачій сало,

in goats' skins, and in cocks' combs.

козій шкура, и пѣтушій гребень *m.*



Declension of various adjectives. The braggart is like the jay, adorned with  
Хвасту́нь (*есть*) похо́жий на (*acc.*) со́я, укра́шенный (*instr.*)

peacocks' feathers. The brother of the neighbour has arrived from  
павли́ний перо́. Братъ сосѣдовъ приѣхалъ изъ (*gen.*)

a distant town, and the sister from a more distant village.  
да́льний городъ, а сестра́ изъ да́льний деревня.

John's coat is small, but that of Peter is still  
Ива́новъ пла́тье (*есть*) у́зкій, но (*пла́тье*) Петро́въ (*есть*) ещё

smaller. The good little old woman lives in a damp  
у́зкій. До́брый стару́шка живѣтъ въ (*prep.*) сыро́й

house, situated near the village Tzaritzino. I have bought a  
домъ, лежа́щій подъ (*instr.*) село́ Цари́цыно. Я купи́лъ (*acc.*)

cloak of bear-skin with a collar of beaver-skin and a  
шу́ба медвѣ́жий съ (*instr.*) воротни́къ бобра́вый, и

cap of beaver-skin with a silk-ribbon. There is a handsome  
ша́пка бобра́вый съ шёлковы́й лѣнта. Вотъ (*nom.*) прекра́сный

book with a rich binding of morocco. Where shall we  
кни́га въ (*prep.*) бога́тый переплѣтъ сафа́нный. Гдѣ мы

find an instance of purer self-denial, of more exalted  
найде́мъ примѣръ чистый самоотверже́ние, высо́кій

love for the native land?

любо́вь *f* къ (*dat.*) оте́чество?

## THE NUMERALS.

Division of  
numerals.

41. — The *numerals* (числи́тельные имена́) are of two kinds: 1) the *cardinal* numerals (ко́личественны́я), which express the number; and 2) the *ordinal* numerals (поря́дочны́я), which indicate order or rank, and are formed (with exception of *пе́рвый*) from the cardinals, as is seen below.

CARDINAL NUMERALS.	ORDINAL NUMERALS.
1. одинъ, <i>н. одно́, ф. одна́ (sl. еди́нъ, ино́, йна)</i> . . . . .	пе́рвый, <i>н. пе́рвое, ф. пе́рвая, first.</i>
2. два, <i>ф. двѣ</i> . . . . .	второ́й, <i>о́е, а́я, second.</i>
3. три . . . . .	тре́тій, <i>тѣе, тѣя, third.</i>
4. четы́ре . . . . .	четы́ртый, <i>о́е, а́я, fourth.</i>
5. пять . . . . .	пя́тый, <i>о́е, а́я, fifth.</i>
6. шесть . . . . .	шесто́й, <i>о́е, а́я, sixth.</i>
7. семь ( <i>sl. седьмь</i> ) . . . . .	седьмо́й, <i>о́е, а́я, seventh.</i>
8. во́семь ( <i>sl. осьмь</i> ) . . . . .	осьмо́й, <i>о́е, а́я, eighth.</i>
9. де́вять . . . . .	девя́тый, <i>о́е, а́я, ninth.</i>
10. де́сять . . . . .	деся́тый, <i>о́е, а́я, tenth.</i>
11. оди́ннадцать . . . . .	оди́ннадцатый <i>or</i> пе́рвый на- десять 11th.
12. двѣ́надцать ( <i>sl. двана́дцать</i> ) . . . . .	двѣ́ннадцатый <i>or</i> второ́й на- десять, 12th.
13. три́надцать . . . . .	три́ннадцатый <i>or</i> тре́тій на- десять, 13th.
14. четы́рнадцать . . . . .	четы́рнадцатый <i>or</i> четы́ртый на-десять, 14th.
15. пяти́надцать . . . . .	пяти́ннадцатый <i>or</i> пя́тый на-де- сять, 15th.
16. шести́надцать . . . . .	шести́ннадцатый <i>or</i> шесто́й на- десять, 16th.
17. семи́надцать . . . . .	семи́ннадцатый <i>or</i> седьмо́й на- десять, 17th.
18. осьми́надцать <i>or</i> восьми́на- дцать . . . . .	осьми́ннадцатый <i>or</i> осьмо́й на- десять, 18th.
19. девяти́надцать . . . . .	девяти́ннадцатый <i>or</i> девя́тый на- десять, 19th.
20. двѣ́дцать ( <i>sl. двѣ́дцать</i> ) . . . . .	двѣ́дцатый ( <i>sl. двѣ́дцѣ́тый</i> ), о́е, а́я, 20th.
21. двѣ́дцать одинъ . . . . .	двѣ́дцать пе́рвый, 21st.
22. двѣ́дцать два . . . . .	двѣ́дцать второ́й, 22d.
30. три́дцать . . . . .	три́дцатый, <i>о́е, а́я, 30th.</i>
40. со́рокъ ( <i>sl. четы́редцѣ́ть</i> ). . . . .	сороко́во́й ( <i>sl. четы́редцѣ́тый</i> ), о́е, а́я, 40th.
50. пяти́десять . . . . .	пяти́десятый, <i>о́е, а́я, 50th.</i>

60. шестьдесят . . . . .	шестидесятый, ое, ая, 60th.
70. сѣмьдесятъ . . . . .	семидесятый, ое, ая, 70th.
80. вѣсьмьдесятъ . . . . .	осьмидесятый, ое, ая, 80th.
90. девѣносто ( <i>sl. дѣвѣть- десятъ</i> ) . . . . .	девѣностый ( <i>sl. девѣтидеся- тый</i> ) 90th.
100. сто . . . . .	сѣтый, ое, ая, hundredth.
200. двѣсти . . . . .	двухъ-сѣтый, ое, ая, 200th.
300. триста . . . . .	трѣхъ-сѣтый, ое, ая, 300th.
400. четырѣста . . . . .	четырѣхъ-сѣтый, ое, ая, 400th.
500. пятьсѣтъ . . . . .	пятисѣтый, ое, ая, 500th.
600. шестьсѣтъ . . . . .	шестисѣтый, ое, ая, 600th.
700. сѣмьсѣтъ . . . . .	семисѣтый, ое, ая, 700th.
800. вѣсьмьсѣтъ . . . . .	осьмисѣтый, ое, ая, 800th.
900. девѣтьсѣтъ . . . . .	девѣтисѣтый, ое, ая, 900th.
1000. тѣсяча ( <i>sl. тѣсяща</i> ) . . . . .	тѣсячный, ое, ая, thousandth.
2000. двѣ тѣсячи . . . . .	двухъ-тѣсячный, ое, ая, two thousandth.
10,000. дѣсять тѣсячъ ( <i>sl. тма</i> ). . . . .	десятитѣсячный, ое, ая, ten thousandth.
100,000. сто тѣсячъ . . . . .	стотѣсячный, ое, ая, 100- thousandth.
1,000,000. милліонъ . . . . .	милліонный, ое, ая, millionth.
2,000,000. два милліона . . . . .	двухъ-милліонный, ое, ая, two millionth.
1,000,000,000. тѣсяча мил- ліоновъ . . . . .	тысячемилліонный, ое, ая, 1000- millionth.
1,000,000,000,000. билліонъ . . . . .	билліонный, ое, ая, billionth.

To the cardinal numerals belong the *fractional* (дрѣбныя) numerals, such as: половѣна, *the half*; третъ, *the third*; четъвертъ, *the fourth*; осьмѣха, *the eighth*; полторá, *one and a half*; полтретья, *two and a half*; полчетвертá, *three and a half*, &c.; and to the ordinal numerals belong also the circumstantial adjectives другѣй, *other*, and послѣдній, *last*: другѣй being used instead of вторѣй, *second*, and послѣдній being opposed to пѣрвый, *first*.

From the cardinal numerals *два, три, &c.* as far as *десять*, as also from *сто*, are formed the *collective* (собира́тельные) numerals: *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро, &c., десятеро, сотеро*. The following words also belong to the collective numerals: *оба* (*f. оба*), *both*; *двойка, two*; *тройка, three*; *пятóк, five*; *десято́к, ten*; *дюжина, a dozen*; *со́тня, a hundred*.

The numerals *одинъ* and *первый* are also used as qualifying adjectives, and in that case take some inflections peculiar to adjectives. *Одинъ* takes the augmentative termination *одинёхонецъ* and *одинёшенекъ*; and *первый* takes the diminutive termination *первенький*, as also the inflection of the superlative *первѣйшій* or *са́мый первый*.

42. — As regards declension, the numerals may <sup>Declension of the numerals.</sup> be considered as substantive and adjective. The *substantive* numerals are: *со́рокъ, сто, девяно́сто, ты́сяча, миллио́нъ, полови́на, треть f., пятóк, десято́к, дюжи́на, &c.* The gender of these, as also their declension, is indicated by their termination. All the ordinal numbers, and the cardinal *одинъ*, are numerals adjective. All the other numerals are sometimes adjective, requiring the same case as the nouns to which they are joined, and sometimes substantive, in which occasion they require the noun to which they belong to be put in the genitive case, as will be seen later. Some of the last mentioned have the inflections of nouns, while others have inflections peculiar to themselves. A general view of the declension of the numerals may be obtained from the following table.



## PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE NUMERALS.

PARAD.	Nom. or Accus.	Gen. or Acc.	Dative.	Instrum.	Propos.
1.	<i>м. одинъ, н. одно, ф. одна, one.</i>	(See its declension in the <i>Pronomins</i> parad. 15).			
2.	<i>м. н. два, ф. двѣ, two.</i>	двухъ . . . . .	двумъ . . . . .	двумѣ . . . . .	двухъ . . . . .
3.	<i>м. н. оба, both.</i>	обоихъ . . . . .	обоимъ . . . . .	обоими . . . . .	обоихъ . . . . .
	<i>фем. оба . . . . .</i>	обѣихъ . . . . .	обѣимъ . . . . .	обѣими . . . . .	обѣихъ . . . . .
4.	три, three . . . . .	трѣхъ . . . . .	трёмъ . . . . .	трѣми . . . . .	трѣхъ . . . . .
5.	четыре, four . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .	четыремъ . . . . .	четырьми . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .
6.	двое and двѣ, two . . . . .	двоихъ . . . . .	двоимъ . . . . .	двоими . . . . .	двоихъ . . . . .
7.	четыре and четыре, four . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .	четыремъ . . . . .	четырьми . . . . .	четырёхъ . . . . .
8.	пять, five . . . . .	пяти . . . . .	пяти . . . . .	пятью . . . . .	пяти . . . . .
9.	восемь, eight . . . . .	осьми . . . . .	осьми . . . . .	восемью . . . . .	осьми . . . . .
10.	пятьдесятъ, fifty . . . . .	пятидесятъ . . . . .	пятидесяти . . . . .	пятидесятью . . . . .	пятидесяти . . . . .
11.	двѣсти, two hundred . . . . .	двухъ сотъ . . . . .	двумъ стамъ . . . . .	двуми стами . . . . .	двухъ стамъ . . . . .
12.	пятьсотъ, five hundred . . . . .	пяти сотъ . . . . .	пяти стамъ . . . . .	пятью стами . . . . .	пяти стамъ . . . . .
13.	<i>м. н. полторѣ, one and a half . . . . .</i>	полтора . . . . .	полтору . . . . .	полторой . . . . .	полторѣ . . . . .
	<i>фем. полторѣ . . . . .</i>	полторы . . . . .	полторѣ . . . . .	полторыми . . . . .	полторѣ . . . . .
	<i>пл. 3 г. полторы . . . . .</i>	полторыхъ . . . . .	полторамъ . . . . .	полторами . . . . .	полторыхъ . . . . .
14.	<i>м. н. полтретьѣ, two and a half . . . . .</i>	полтретьѣ . . . . .	полтретью . . . . .	полтретьими . . . . .	полтретьѣ . . . . .
	<i>фем. полтретьѣ . . . . .</i>	полтретьи . . . . .	полтретьѣ . . . . .	полтретьими . . . . .	полтретьѣ . . . . .
	<i>пл. 3 г. полтретьи . . . . .</i>	полтретьихъ . . . . .	полтретьимъ . . . . .	полтретьими . . . . .	полтретьихъ . . . . .
15.	<i>сing. полдень . . . . .</i>	полдни . . . . .	полдню . . . . .	полднемъ . . . . .	полднѣ . . . . .
	<i>plur. полдни . . . . .</i>	полдней . . . . .	полднямъ . . . . .	полднями . . . . .	полдняхъ . . . . .
16.	<i>сing. полгода, half a year . . . . .</i>	полгода . . . . .	полгоду . . . . .	полгодомъ . . . . .	полгодѣ . . . . .
	<i>plur. полгода . . . . .</i>	полгодовъ . . . . .	полгодамъ . . . . .	полгодами . . . . .	полгодахъ . . . . .

With respect to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the numerals we may remark, that it is generally placed on the inflections of the cases, as happens in all the numerals from *одинъ* to *десять*, and from *двадцать* to *восемьдесятъ*, as also in *двое*, *трое*, *четыре* and other similar words. The numerals *пять*, *шесть*, &c. as far as *десять*, as also *двадцать* and *тридцать*, while they are declined as feminine nouns in *в*, differ from them in the accent, which is placed on the last vowel in all the cases: *пяти*, *пятью*, *десяти*, &c., whilst in the nouns the accent is transposed only in the prepositional case: *въ связи*, *въ тѣни*, &c. The numeral *сорокъ*, which is declined like nouns in *ъ*, differs from them in the accent; for no dissyllabic noun can, without the elision of the vowel, transfer its accent from the first syllable to the inflection of the cases, as happens in *сорокъ*; *сорока*, *сороку*, &c.



According to the 6th and 7th paradigms (двое and четверо) are declined the similar collective numerals; viz:

6th par.) Трое and троя, three.	Шестеро and шестеры, six.
О'бое and обон, two.	Десятеро and десятеры, ten.
7th par.) Пятеро and пятеры, five.	Сотеро and сотеры, hundred.

Двое, трое, четверо, &c., are used with the names of animate beings of the masculine and neuter gender; and двои, трои, четверы, &c., with the names of inanimate and abstract objects which only occur in the plural; e. g. двое слугъ, *two servants*; трои часы, *three watches*. We may still observe that обое had formerly a singular, the genitive, обоего, of which is still found in the expression: жители обоего пола, *the natives of both sexes*.

According to the 8th and 10th paradigms (пять and пятьдесятъ) are declined the similar numbers following, with the exception of восемь, which is declined by the 9th paradigm; e. g.

8th par.) Шесть, six, <i>gen.</i> шестѣ.	Тридцать, thirty, <i>gen.</i> тридцатѣ.
Семь, seven, <i>семѣ</i> .	[десяти.
Девять, nine, <i>девятѣ</i> .	10th par.) Шестьдесятъ, sixty, <i>шестѣ</i> .
Десять, ten, <i>десяти</i> .	Семьдесятъ, seventy, <i>семѣ</i> .
Одиннадцать, eleven, <i>одиннадцати</i> .	десяти.
Двадцать, twenty, <i>двадцатѣ</i> .	Восемьдесятъ, eighty,
	осмидесяти.

The first member *восемь* of the last word is declined according to the 9th paradigm: *gen.* осмидесяти, *instr.* восемьюдесятью or осмидесятью.

According to the 11th and 12th paradigms (двести and пятьсотъ) are declined the following numerals; viz:

11th par.) Триста, three hundred, <i>gen.</i> трѣхъ сотъ.	Семьсотъ, 700, <i>gen.</i> семи сотъ
Четыреста, 400, <i>четырёхъ</i>	Восемьсотъ, 800, <i>осьми сотъ</i> .
12th par.) Шестьсотъ, 600, <i>шести сотъ</i> .	Девятьсотъ, 900, <i>деяти сотъ</i> .

Двѣсти (instead of *два́ста*) is the Slavonic dual of сто, and was used with два and оба, as we shall see later.

According to the 13th paradigm (полтора) are declined such numerals as are formed of полъ, *the half*, with the apocopated genitive of the ordinal number, with the exception of полтретья, which is declined according to the 14th paradigm: e. g.

Получетверта́, three and a half, *gen.* полу́четверта; *fem.* полчетверты́.  
 Полпя́та, four and a half, . . . полу́пята; . . . полпяты́.  
 Полшестá, five and a half, . . . полу́шеста; . . . полшесты́.  
 Полдесята́, nine and a half, . . . полу́десята; . . . полдесяты́.

The compound numeral *полтора́ста*, *a hundred and fifty* (*a hundred and a half*) forms *полутора́ста* in all the oblique cases. All these words, however, with the exception of *полтора́* and *полтора́ста*, are antiquated, and no longer used.

According to the 15th and 16th paradigms (*по́лдень* and *по́лгода*) are declined such nouns as are formed with the numeral *полъ*, *the half*; e. g.

15th p.) По́лночь, midnight, <i>gen.</i> полу́-	Полслова́, half a word, <i>gen.</i> полуслова́.
ночи.	[часá. Полминуты́, half a minute, полу-
16th p.) Полчасá, half an hour, полу-	минуты́.
По́лдень, half a day, полу́дня.	Полверсты́, half a werst, полуверсты́.
Полведрá, half a pail, полу-	Полфунта́, half a pound, полу-
ведра́.	фунта́.

We must remark that the numeral *полъ* is joined to substantives in the genitive singular, to indicate *a half*, with the exception of *по́лдень* and *по́лночь*, which signify the *middle of the day* or *of the night*, *midday* or *midnight*. All these nouns are declined by joining *полу* to the other cases of the simple substantive. We have still to add that *по́лдень* takes in the prepositional with *но* the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*); thus we say: *по полу́дни*, *after noon*. Such nouns as have *полу* in the nominative singular, as *полуо́стровъ*, *a peninsula*; *полумѣсяцъ*, *a crescent*, are declined like simple substantives.

In the compound cardinal numerals, such as: *два́дцать два*, *twenty two*; *три́дцать пять*, *thirty five*; *сто шесть*, *a hundred and six*, each number is declined separately; *G.* *двадцати́ двухъ*, *тридцати́ пяти́*, *ста шести́*, &c. But when they form ordinal numerals, such as: *два́дцать пе́рвый*, *twenty first*; *сто второ́й*, *hundred and second*, the ordinal number only is declined, and the cardinal numerals remain indeclinable; *G.* *два́дцать пе́рваго*, *сто второ́го*. The same is the case with *на́десять*, in the compound numbers; e. g. *пе́рвый-на́десять*, *eleventh*; *второ́й-на́десять*, *twelfth*, where the first part, *пе́рвый*, *второ́й*, is alone declined.

The other numerals follow the declension of the nouns or adjectives to which by their termination they belong. Thus

сорокъ, *forty*; миллионъ, *million*; десятокъ, *ten*, follow the first declensions of substantives (§ 30, *gen.* сорока́, миллио́на, де́сятка); сто, *a hundred*, and девяно́сто, *ninety*, follow the second; while дюжи́на, *a dozen*; со́тня, *a hundred*; ты́сяча, *a thousand* (*instr. sing.* ты́сячею and ты́сячью) are declined according to the third. On this subject we must observe that the numerals *сорокъ*, *сто* and *девяно́сто* only follow the declension of the substantives when they are used as nouns to express *forties*, *hundreds* and *nineties*, and then *сорокъ* and *сто* have also a plural (сороки́, сороко́въ; ста, со́тъ, &c.); but when they are joined to a substantive, or to another numeral, they take in the *dative* and *instrumental* cases singular the inflection of the genitive (сорока́, ста, девяно́ста), and sometimes even in the *prepositional*, especially with another numeral.

The ordinal numerals, which are all adjectives, terminating in *ый*, or *ой* (*neut. ое*, *fem. ая*), are declined according to the full termination of the adjectives, with the exception of трéтій (*n. трéтье*, *f. трéтья*), *third*, which is declined according to the mixed termination (§ 40).

The numerals *два*, *оба*, *три*, *четыре*, *двое*, *трое*, *четыре*, have the accusative like the nominative, when they are with the names of inanimate and abstract objects, and like the genitive, when with the names of animate beings. But all the rest: *пять*, *шесть*, *семь*, *два́дцать*, &c. have always the accusative like the nominative; the same is the case with the numbers *два*, *три*, *четыре*, when joined to tens, hundreds or thousands; as *два́дцать два*, *twenty two*; *сто три*, *a hundred and three*, &c., even when referring to animate objects; e. g. *собрáть два́дцать два во́нна* (and not *два́дцать дву́х во́нновъ*), *to unite twenty two warriors*.

43. — The cardinal numerals, in Russian, when joined with substantives follow various rules unlike those of any other language. These rules are as follows:

Special rules  
of the  
numerals.

1. *Оди́нъ* agrees with its substantive in gender, number and case, and in the compound numerals, such as, *два́дцать оди́нъ*, *сто оди́нъ*, the substantive is always put in the singular.

2. The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре* (and their compounds as *двадцать два, сто четыре, &c.*), *полтора, полтретья*, and others of the same kind, when employed in the nominative or accusative, require the noun to which they belong, to be put in the *genitive singular*, observing that *два, оба, полтора, полтретья*, agree in *gender* with the noun. If there is an adjective, it takes the gender of the substantive and is put in the *nominative plural*.—With all the other numerals, from *пять*, as also with *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро, &c.*, the substantive is put in the *genitive plural*, and if there be an adjective, it agrees with the noun or with the numeral, according to the sense of the phrase. Thus we say: *первые два большие стола, the two first large tables*; and *сидят пять больших столов, these five large tables*.

This *genitive singular*, which occurs with the numerals *два, три, четыре*, is simply the Slavonic *dual*, which was used with *два* and *оба*, and which has also been retained in *двѣсти* (*sl. двѣтъ*). The numerals *три* and *четыре* were simple adjectives, agreeing with their substantive, while *пять* and the numerals following were considered as collective nouns, always requiring the *genitive plural* after them.

A peculiarity of the Russian language must still be mentioned: it requires the adjective which accompanies the nouns formed of the numerals *полъ* (as *полчася, полгода*), as also the numerals *полтора, полтретья*, to be placed in the *nominative plural*: e. g. *первые полчася, the first half hour*. But in the other cases the adjective agrees with the substantive; e. g. *въ продолжение первого получаса, in the space of the first half hour*.

3. With the numerals in the oblique cases, the substantive is always put in the plural. *a)* When the numerals have a gender, as: *пятюбѣ, двюжина, тысяча, миллионъ*, the noun is always put in the *genitive*, and the same rule applies equally to *сорокъ* and *сто*, when used in the plural. *б)* With the other numerals, such as: *два, оба, три, четыре, пять, сорокъ, девяносто, сто, &c.*, the noun agrees with the numeral in *case*. We remark further that in words compounded of two numerals the case of the substantive is determined by the later numeral. Thus we say: *съ тремястами воиновъ, with three hundred warriors*, and *со ста тремя воинами, with a hundred and three warriors*;



въ сорокъ *верстахъ*, at *forty wersts*, and сорокъ сороковъ *церквей*, one thousand six hundred churches (forty forties).

4. With the preposition *по*, indicating the distribution of an equal quantity, the numerals *два, три, четыре, две, три, четыре*, retain the inflection of the nominative, and then the noun is put in the *genitive singular*, but the other numerals are put in the dative (*сорокъ, сто* and *девятьсто* then take their regular inflection *у*), and the noun is put in the *genitive plural*. Thus we say: *по два рубля, по пяти рублёй, по сороку рублёй*, to each two, five, forty roobles.

The numerals *полтора, полтретья*, &c., take also with the preposition *по* the inflection *у* of the dative, and the noun in the *genitive singular*: in all other cases the noun and the numeral agree; e. g. *по полутора рубль*, to each a rooble and a half.

#### EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

Man has one tongue, one nose, two eyes, *У (gen.) человекъ (есть) одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза,* two ears, two cheeks, two arms, two legs, ten fingers *два уха, два щека, два рука, два нога, десять пальцевъ* at the hands and ten toes at the feet, thirty two teeth, *на (prep.) рука и десять пальцевъ на нога, тридцать два зуба,* and seven vertebres. Leap year has four *и семь позвонокъ. Въ (prep.) високосный годъ (есть) четыре* seasons, 12 months, 52 weeks and two days, or 366 days, *время, 12 мѣсяцъ, 52 недѣля и два день т, или 366 день,* or 8784 hours, or 527,040 minutes. The book has a *или 8784 часъ, или 527,040 минутъ. Въ (prep.) книга (есть)* hundred leaves less one. The two brothers and the two *сто листъ безъ (gen.) одинъ. Оба братъ и оба* sisters. An hour and a half, and a minute and a half. Two *сестра. Полтора часъ, и полтора минутъ. Два* roobles and a half, and three kopecs and a half. *рубль т съ (instr.) половина и три копейка съ половиною.*



The berkovetz has 10 poods; the pood 40 pounds; the  
 Въ (*prep.*) бёрковецъ (*есмь*) 10 пудъ; въ пудъ 40 фунтъ; въ  
 pound 32 loths; the loth 3 zolotniks; the pound has 96  
 фунтъ 32 лоть; въ лоть 3 золотникъ; въ фунтъ 96  
 zolotniks.  
 золотникъ.

Two beaver-hats, three silk-handkerchiefs, four pen-  
 Два пуховый шляпа, три шёлковый платокъ, четы́ре перо-  
 knives, five cups of porcelain, and six magnificent  
 чинный но́жикъ, пять ча́шка фарфо́ровый, и шесть прекра́сный  
 pictures. These two black crows; these three white feathers;  
 карти́на. Си́и два че́рный во́ронъ; ть три бѣ́лый перо́;  
 my four new books; these five petulant children. The  
 мой четы́ре но́вый кни́га; э́ти пять рѣ́звый дитя́. Оба  
 two poor orphan boys, and the two unhappy orphan girls.  
 бе́дный сирота́, и оба несча́стный сирота́.

Two servants, three workmen, four children, six  
 Дво́е слуга́, трое масте́рово́й, четы́веро дитя́, ше́стеро  
 soldiers, two watches, three pairs of spectacles, five pairs  
 солда́тъ, дво́и часы́ *т*, трои очки́ *т*, пя́теры  
 of scissors. The first hour and a half. The first forty days;  
 но́жницы *ф*. Пе́рвый полтора́ часъ. Пе́рвый со́рокъ де́нь;  
 the second hundred crowns, and the last thousand florins.  
 второ́й сто ефи́мокъ, и послѣ́дний ты́сяча гу́льденъ.

I have bought an ox and a horse, a table and  
 Я купи́лъ одинъ быкъ и одинъ ло́шадь *ф*, одинъ столъ и  
 a mirror. Twenty one roobles, fifty one  
 одинъ зе́ркало. Два́дцать одинъ рубль *т*, пятьдеся́тъ одинъ  
 kopecks. The thousand one nights. A young man of thirty  
 копе́йка. Ты́сяча и одинъ ночь *ф*. Молодо́й челове́къ три́дцать  
 one years less twenty one days. Do not judge  
 одинъ годъ безъ (*gen.*) два́дцать одинъ де́нь *т*. Не суди́

of a man by a single fault and by a single  
о (*prep.*) челове́къ по (*dat.*) о́динъ просту́покъ и по о́динъ  
error. An officer with twenty one soldiers. Peter  
ошиб́ка. Офице́ръ съ (*instr.*) двáдцать о́динъ солда́тъ. Петро́  
the First and Catharine the Second reigned in the  
Пе́рвый и Ека́те́рина Вто́рой ца́рствовали въ (*prep.*)  
eighteenth century. The Swedes revere Charles XII, and  
восемна́дцатый вѣ́къ. Шве́дь уважа́ютъ Ка́рль XII, а  
the French have erected a monument to Henry IV. The  
Францу́зь поста́вили па́мятникъ Ге́нрихъ IV.  
article was written on the 15th of the month of January,  
Статья́ была́ пи́сана (*gen.*) 15 мѣ́сяць я́нваря *m*,  
in the year 1823, and the event relates to the VI  
го́дь 1823, и прои́сше́ствіе о́тно́сится къ (*dat.*) VI  
century, and particularly to the year 573.  
вѣ́къ, а и́менно къ (*dat.*) го́дь 573.

A cupboard with a dozen of plates of porcelain, or  
Шка́пъ съ (*instr.*) дю́жина тарѣ́лка фарфо́ровый, или́  
with twelve plates of porcelain. A droshky drawn by  
съ двѣ́надцать тарѣ́лка фарфо́ровый. Дро́жки, запря́женный (*instr.*)  
a pair of bay horses, or by two bay horses; and a carriage  
па́ра вороно́й ло́шадь, или́ два вороно́й ло́шадь; и ка́рета  
drawn by six sorrel horses, or by a team of six  
запря́женный (*instr.*) ше́сть ры́жий ло́шадь, или́ ше́стёрка  
sorrel horses. The town is situated a thousand wersts  
ры́жий ло́шадь. Го́родъ ле́житъ въ (*prep.*) ты́сяча верста́  
from here, the village a hundred wersts, and the hamlet forty  
отсю́да, се́ло во сто верста́, а дере́вня въ со́рокъ  
wersts. At Moscow there were 1600 churches, or forty  
верста́. Въ (*prep.*) Моско́ва́ было́ 1600 це́рковь, или́ со́рокъ  
forties of churches. I am satisfied with eighty  
со́рокъ це́рковь. Я дово́льствуюсь (*instr.*) во́семьдесятъ

roobles (or with two forties of roobles) a month,  
 рубль *m* (или два сорокъ рубль) въ (*acc.*) мѣсяцъ,

i. e. with 960 roobles a year. He will not live till  
 то есть 960 рубль въ (*acc.*) годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до (*gen.*)

forty years; and she died at forty three. She is  
 сорокъ лѣто; и она умерла (*gen.*) сорокъ три лѣто. Она (*estъ*)

satisfied with forty kopecs, and she admired a  
 довольный (*instr.*) сорокъ копѣйка, и она удивилась (*dat.*)

hundred pictures. He cannot live on less than a  
 сто картинъ. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе (*gen.*)

hundred thousand roobles a year. A town with two  
 сто тысяча рубль *m* въ (*acc.*) годъ. Городъ съ (*instr.*) два

towers; a chest with six drawers; a house with forty windows;  
 башня; комодъ съ шесть ящикъ; домъ съ сорокъ окно;

a fortress with a hundred cannons; a church with five  
 крѣпость *f* со сто пушка; церковь *f* о (*prep.*) пять

cupolas; a house of three stories; a village with four  
 главъ; домъ о (*prep.*) три ярусъ; деревня съ (*instr.*) тетыре

wind-mills. I love equally the two sons and the two  
 вѣтряный мельница. Я люблю равно оба сынъ и оба

daughters. He has four children, and she has left five  
 дочь *f*. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дитя, а она оставила пятеро

orphans. My brother has not been able to manage these two  
 сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ слáдить съ (*instr.*) этими два

restive horses. He has lived long with his five  
 упрямый лошады *f*. Онъ жилъ долго съ (*instr.*) своими пять

cousins german. To this million of old Prussian  
 братъ двоюродный. Къ (*dat.*) этому миллионъ старый прусскій

crowns must be added a thousand of these new roobles.  
 ефимокъ надобно прибавить тысяча тѣхъ новый рубль *m*.

To each a hundred roobles and forty kopecs.  
 Каждый по (*dat.*) сто рубль *m* и по (*dat.*) сорокъ копѣйка.

Some months have thirty days  
 Въ (*prep.*) нѣкоторый мѣсяць (*есмь*) по (*dat.*) тридцать день *m*,  
 and others thirty one days. In each coachhouse  
 а въ другой по тридцать одинъ день. Въ (*prep.*) каждый сарай  
 there were two carriages, and in each carriage  
 было по (*nom.*) два карѣта, а въ каждый карѣта по (*nom.*)  
 three men, and four women. To each a hundred and  
 три мужіина и по четыре жѣнщина. Каждый по (*dat.*) сто по  
 ninety roobles and forty five kopecks. We  
 девяносто рубль *m* и по сорокъ по пять копѣйка. У насъ  
 have each twenty seven points. Every part of  
 (*есмь*) по (*dat.*) двѣдцать по семь очкіи *m*. Каждый часть *f*  
 the work is sold at the rate of a rooble and a half of silver.  
 сочинѣніе продаѣтся по (*dat.*) полтора рубль *m* (*instr.*) серебрѣ.

By the morning one must not judge of midday. During  
 По (*dat.*) утро не должно судить о (*prep.*) полдень *m*. Въ (*acc.*)  
 the first half day he did not know what to do. At  
 первый полдня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ (*acc.*)  
 four o' clock in the morning, or at five o' clock in the  
 четыре часъ по (*prep.*) полночь *f*, или въ пять часъ по  
 afternoon. That happened during the latter half of  
 полдень *m*. Это случилось въ (*acc.*) послѣдній полгода  
 the year 1844. The first half hour passed quietly. During  
 годъ 1844. Первый полчаса прошліи спокойно. Въ (*acc.*)  
 the space of the first half hour. I had a hundred and  
 продолженіе первый полчаса. За мною было полтораста  
 fifty thousand roobles of annual revenue.  
 тысяча рубль *m* годово́й дохо́дь.



## THE PRONOUNS.

Division  
of the  
pronouns.

44. — The *pronouns* (мѣстоимѣнія) in Russian are divided into seven kinds.

1. The *personal* pronouns (личныя) are, in the first person: я, *I*; plur. мы, *we*; in the second ты, *thou*; plur. вы, *you*; and in the third person онъ, *he* (fem. она́, *she*; neut. оно́, *it*); plur. они́, *they* (fem. онѣ́, *they*). There is in Russian another personal pronoun, which is applied to all the three persons and both numbers, and which is used when the action of the object returns on the agent: e. g. я себя знаю́, *I know myself*; ты себя бережѣшь, *thou takest care of thyself*; мы себя обмáнываемъ, *we deceive ourselves*. This is called the *reflected* (возврáтное) personal pronoun.

When the reflected pronoun is used at the end of the verbs, it is contracted into *ся* or *сь*; e. g. домъ стрóится, *the house is being built*; я мо́юсь, *I wash myself* (instead of стрóить себя́, мо́ю себя́).

2. The *possessive* pronouns (притяжáтельныя) are, in the first person: мой, *my* or *mine*; нашъ, *our* or *ours*; in the second person: твой, *thy* or *thine*: вашъ, *your* or *yours*; and for all the three persons: the reflected свой, *my, thy, his, our, your, their*.

In Russian there is no possessive pronoun for the third person: its place being supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun: его́, *of him* or *his*; ея́, *of her* or *her*; ихъ, *of them* or *their*; e. g. я былъ у его́ брата́, *I have been to his brother (to the brother of him)*; я знаю́ ея́ мужа́, *I know her husband (the husband of her)*; я это́ дѣлаю́ для ихъ дѣтѣй, *I do that for their children (for the children of them)*.

3. The *demonstrative* pronouns (указáтельныя) are: сей, éтотъ, óный, *this*; тотъ, *that*; такой, таковóй, толи́кий, *such* or *such an one*.



4. The *relative* pronouns (относительныя) are: кто, *who* or *he who*; что, *which* or *that which*; котóрый, кой, *who*; какóй, каковóй, коlíкій, *who* or *he who*; чей, *whose*; скóлько, *how much* or *so much*.

5. The *interrogative* pronouns (вопросительныя) are the same as the relative.

6. The *determinative* (опредѣлительныя) or *attributive* (дополнительныя) pronouns are: самъ, сáмый, *self*; весь, *all*; кáждый, вся́кій, *each*. To this class belong also the numerals оди́нъ, *a single one* or *one only*, and óба, *both*.

The pronouns самъ and сáмый have the same meaning, but the former is used with the personal pronouns and with the names of animate objects, the latter with the demonstrative pronouns and the names of inanimate and abstract objects: е. г. я самъ, *myself*; онъ самъ, *himself*; самогó себя, *one's self*; отéцъ самъ, *the father himself*; тотъ сáмый, сей сáмый, *the very same*; сáмая смерть, *death itself*. The pronoun сáмый before a qualifying adjective expresses the superlative (§ 38. 3).

7. The *indefinite* pronouns (неопредѣлённыя) are: нѣкто, *somebody*; нѣчто, *something*; никто́, *nobody*; ничтó, *nothing*; кто ли́бо, кто нибу́дь, кто-то, кто ни есть, *whoever*; что ли́бо, что нибу́дь, что-то, что ни есть, *whatever*; нѣкій, нѣкакій, нѣкоторый, какóй-то, *some*; ни какóй, ни котóрый, ни оди́нъ, *not any, none*; другóй, инóй, прóчій, *other*; стóлько, *as much, as far*; нѣсколько, *some*; мно́го, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; другъ дру́га, *each other*; тотъ и дру́гой, *the one and the other*; всякъ, *each*.

45. — The pronouns are either substantive or adjective. 1) The *substantive* pronouns are: я, ты, онъ, себя, кто, что, нѣкто, нѣчто, никто́, ничтó,



of which one only (*онъ*) has all the three genders; *себя*, *кто*, *что* are the same in both numbers, and *себя* has no nominative. 2) All the other pronouns are *adjective*, and like the adjectives they have three genders, two numbers and seven cases, and agree with the substantive to which they belong.

46. — The substantive pronouns are declined in a peculiar manner as will be seen later. Those of the adjective pronouns which end like the adjectives, in *ый* and *ій* (or *ой*), fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*, such as: *который*, *оный*, *самый*, *каждый*, *таковой*, *всякий*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of adjectives (§ 41); while such as have a termination differing from that of the adjectives, such as: *мой*, *нашъ*, *самъ*, *сей*, also *такой* and *какой*, are declined in a particular way.

Declension  
of the  
pronouns.

The following observations on the declension of pronouns are necessary.

1. The oblique cases of the pronoun of the third person (3d paradigm) take the euphonic letter *н*, when they are preceded by a preposition; e. g. *у него*, *to him*; *къ нему*, *towards him*; *съ нею*, *with her*; *о нёмъ*, *of him*; *безъ нихъ*, *without them*, &c. But this addition does not take place when the genitive *его*, *ей*, *ихъ*, serves as a possessive pronoun; e. g. *въ его домъ*, *in his house*; *къ ихъ пользѣ*, *to their advantage*. — The genitive singular feminine of this pronoun sometimes takes the inflection of the accusative; e. g. *я еѣ не видѣлъ* (instead of *ей*), *I have not seen her*; *у неѣ* (instead of *у ней*), *to her*, and this inflection is sometimes contracted: *у ней*.

2. According to the 5th and 6th paradigms (*кто* and *что*) are declined the pronouns compounded from *кто* and *что*; e. g. *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *нѣкто*, *кто нибудь*, *кто либо*, *кто-то*, *somebody*; *нѣчто*, *что нибудь*, *что либо*, *что-то*, *something*; remarking that, if there be a preposition with *никто* and *ничто*, it is placed between the particle *ни* and the pronoun;

e. g. ни у когó, *to nobody*; ни къ чѣмý, *to nothing*; ни за что, *for nothing*; ни съ кѣмъ, *with nobody*; and also observing that the parts *нибóудь*, *лѣбо* and *то* are invariable.

3. According to the 7th paradigm (мой) are declined the pronouns твой, *thy*; свой, *his*, and кой, *who*, observing that this last is not used in the nominative and accusative singular of any of the genders, and that it has the tonic accént in all the cases on the first syllable (кóего, кóн, кóихъ, &c.). Its compound нѣкíй, *some*, is declined in the same manner in the singular; but in the plural it takes the inflections of the adjectives: *N.* нѣкíе, *f.* нѣкíя; *G.* нѣкихъ, *D.* нѣкимъ, &c.

4. According to the 8th paradigm (нашъ) is declined the pronoun вашъ, *your*.

5. According to the 16th paradigm (како́й) are declined тако́й, *such*; нѣкакíй, *some*, and этакíй, *such an one*.

6. The other pronouns which have the adjective termination *ый* and *йй* or *ой* (fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*), such as: о́ный, сáмый, всѣ́йй, другóйй, инóйй, каковóйй, таковóйй, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of the adjectives (§ 41). The pronouns каковóйй and таковóйй have also the apocopated termination: *какóвъ* and *такóвъ*. In the pronoun другъ дру́га, *each other*, which is used for the three genders and both numbers, the first part remains indeclinable, while the second is declined like a substantive; *G.* другъ дру́га, *D.* другъ дру́гу, *A.* другъ дру́га, *I.* другъ дру́гомъ, *P.* другъ о дру́гъ. The pronouns самъ-дру́гъ, *two together*; самъ-третéй, *three together*, &c., are indeclinable and are used for all the three persons, the three genders and both numbers.

7. The pronoun *всякъ* is used instead of *всякíй человѣкъ*, but only in the masculine singular. The pronouns *скóлько*, *стóлько*, *нѣско́лько*, have in the singular, besides this termination which serves both for the nominative and accusative, only the dative in *у* with the preposition *по* (*по скóлькy*, &c.); and in the plural they have only the genitive, the dative, the instrumental and the prepositional cases (*скóлькихъ*, *скóлькимъ*, *скóлькими*, &c.).

8. *Одѣ́нъ* (parad. 15) is both a numerative and a determinative pronoun. The same is the case with the Slavonic word



еди́нъ (*n.* еди́но, *f.* еди́на), which is used in an elevated style, and which is declined in the singular like an adjective of the full termination: *G.* еди́наго, еди́ной; *D.* еди́ному, &c.; but in the plural it takes the apocopated form: еди́ны, еди́ныхъ, еди́нымъ.

### EXERCISES ON THE PRONOUNS.

I love thee, and thou offendest me. We esteem him, Personal  
pronouns.  
Я люблю ты, а ты обижа́ешь я. Я уважа́емъ онъ,

as to her, we love her sincerely. I have much money,  
а онъ я люблю́ душе́вно. У (*gen.*) я (*estъ*) мно́го де́ньги,

and thou hast not a penny. Protect him, and  
а у (*gen.*) ты нѣтъ ни (*gen.*) копѣйка. Заступи́сь за (*acc.*) онъ, и

depend upon her. Take a seat with me, and come  
понадѣ́йся на (*acc.*) онъ. Посиди́ съ (*instr.*) я, и приходи́

with him. Tell her, to come to me. Without  
съ (*instr.*) онъ. Скажи́ онъ, чтобъ онъ пришл́а ко (*dat.*) я. Безъ (*gen.*)

him, without her and without you, life is wearisome to me.  
онъ, безъ онъ и безъ ты, жизнь (*estъ*) скучны́й я.

I do not see them, and I will do every thing for them.  
Я не ви́жу онъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для (*gen.*) онъ.

We esteem you, and you have forgotten us. Depend  
Я уважа́емъ ты, а ты забы́л я. Будь увѣренъ

on me; I will speak of thee. It is agreeable to me  
во (*prep.*) я; я погово́рю о (*prep.*) ты. (*estъ*) При́ятно я

to be with her. I do not trust myself, and thou art  
быть съ (*instr.*) онъ. Я не до́вѣряю се́бя, а ты (*есѣ*)

contented with thyself. We take care of ourselves, and they  
дово́льный (*instr.*) се́бя. Я береже́мъ се́бя, а онъ

do themselves harm.

се́бя вре́дятъ.



Possessive  
pronouns.

My brother, thy sister and his son have studied together.  
Мой братъ, твой сестра́ и онъ сынъ учились вмѣстѣ.

I try to be agreeable to your master and to our  
Я стараюсь угоди́тъ вашъ учи́тель *т* и нашъ  
inspector. My house is more beautiful than thine, and  
смотри́тель *т*. Мой домъ (*есть*) краси́вый (*gen.*) твой, а  
thy dog is less than mine. I live without them,  
твой соба́ка (*есть*) ма́лый (*gen.*) мой. Я живу́ безъ (*gen.*) онъ,  
and I can dispense with their help. Do not boast  
и могу́ обойтись безъ (*gen.*) онъ по́мощь *ф*. Не хвали́сь (*instr.*)  
of thy labours, and think of thy years. Draw near  
свой трудъ, а поду́май о (*prep.*) свой ле́то. Подойди́ къ (*dat.*)  
my table, and give some money to thy sister. We talk  
мой столъ, и подари́ (*gen.*) де́ньги *ф* твой сестра́. Я говори́мъ  
about our affairs, and you occupy yourself with your lesson.  
о (*prep.*) свой дѣло, а ты занима́етесь (*instr.*) свой уро́къ.  
Study is bitter, but its fruits are sweet. Thy gardens  
Уче́ние (*есть*) го́рькій, но онъ пло́дъ (*суть*) сла́дкій. Твой садъ  
are superb; I admire their beauties.  
(*суть*) прекра́сный; я уди́вляюсь онъ (*dat.*) красота́.

Demonstra-  
tive pro-  
nouns.

Dost thou see this dog and this cat, these men and  
Ви́дишь ли э́тотъ соба́ка и э́тотъ ко́тъ, э́тотъ лю́ди *т* и  
those trees? In these countries there is no gold; and  
то́тъ де́рево? Въ (*prep.*) э́тотъ земля́ нѣтъ (*gen.*) зо́лото; и  
in those no silver. I have heard that from  
въ (*prep.*) то́тъ нѣтъ (*gen.*) серебро́. Я слы́шалъ э́тотъ отъ (*gen.*)  
your brother, but I do not believe it. I praise your  
вашъ бра́тъ, но я не вѣ́рю (*dat.*) э́тотъ. Я хвалю́ вашъ  
project; it is long since I had foreseen it. Have you  
наме́реніе; да́вно я предви́дѣлъ о́ный. Живёшь ли  
lived long in this town? I admire this garden,  
ты да́вно въ (*prep.*) сей городъ? Я уди́вляюсь (*dat.*) э́тотъ садъ,

but that is more beautiful. These pens are blunt; these  
 а тотъ (*есть*) хоро́шій. Э́тотъ перо́ (*суть*) тупо́й; се́й  
 houses are of stone; these streets are narrow. Such eyes  
 домо́ ка́менный; то́тъ у́лица у́зкій. Тако́й гла́зъ  
 are piercing; such actions do not do honour.  
 (*суть*) про́ницательный; тако́й де́ло не прино́сятъ (*ген.*) че́сть.

Such are men.  
 Таковóй (*суть*) лю́ди *т.*

The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the substantive to which they belong, and take the *case* required by the following verb, with the exception of the pronoun *чей*, which agrees in gender, number and case with the accompanying substantive. Relative pronouns.

The man whom you see, is very intelligent.  
 Чело́вѣкъ, кото́рый ты ви́дите, (*есть*) о́чень у́мный.

The book which you read is very agreeable. I know  
 Кни́га, кото́рый ты чита́ете, (*есть*) о́чень прі́ятный. Я зна́ю  
 the affair of which you speak. The water with which  
 де́ло, о (*преп.*) кото́рый ты говори́те. Во́да, (*instr.*) кото́рый

I wash myself, is very cold. Beware of him who  
 я мо́юсь, (*есть*) о́чень хо́лодный. Береги́сь (*ген.*) то́тъ, кто  
 flatters thee. He who has much business,  
 льсти́тъ (*dat.*) ты. То́тъ у (*ген.*) кто (*есть*) мно́го (*ген.*) де́ло,  
 does not think of pleasures. Learn that which  
 не ду́маетъ о (*преп.*) забáва. Учи́тесь (*dat.*) то́тъ, (*ген.*)

you are ignorant of. Here is cloth like that of which I  
 что ты не зна́ете. Вотъ (*ном.*) сукно́ тако́й, како́й я  
 bought some. Such was the chief, such were the soldiers.  
 купи́лъ. Каковóй былъ военача́льникъ, таковóй и во́инъ.

That is the friend, in whose hands is my destiny.  
 Вотъ (*ном.*) другъ, въ (*преп.*) чей рука́ (*есть*) мой судьба́.

Listen to those in whose house thou hast lived.  
 Слу́шайся (*ген.*) то́тъ, въ (*преп.*) чей домо́ ты жи́лъ.

There is a book (*of those*) such as there are few of, and  
 Вотъ книга (*изъ gen. такой*), (*gen.*) какой (*есть*) мало, и  
 an opportunity like those are rare.

случай каковѣй (*суть*) рѣдкій.

Interroga-  
 tive pro-  
 nouns.

What o'clock is it, and at what o'clock wilt  
 Котѣрый часъ (*есть*), и въ (*prep.*) котѣрый часъ

thou come? With what books dost thou occupy thyself, and  
 прійдѣшь? (*instr.*) Какой книга занимаешься, и

what people live here? Under what chief  
 какой люди *т* живутъ здѣсь? Подъ (*instr.*) котѣрый начальникъ

dost thou serve, and what language dost thou learn? Whose  
 ты слѣжишь, и (*dat.*) какой языкъ ты учишься? Чей

are these houses? By whose permission hast thou  
 (*суть*) этотъ домъ? Съ (*gen.*) чей позволеніе ты вышелъ

gone out? I have not seen whose hat has been thrown  
 со двора? Я не видѣлъ, чей шляпа бросили

to the ground. I do not know with whose children she  
 на (*acc.*) полъ. Я не знаю, съ (*instr.*) чей дитя онъ

is walking. About what dost thou trouble thyself, and  
 гуляетъ. О (*prep.*) что ты заботишься, и

in what way have I deserved thy friendship? On what  
 (*instr.*) что я заслужилъ твой дружба? Съ (*instr.*) что

can one congratulate thee, and from whom hast thou  
 можно поздравить ты, и отъ (*gen.*) кто ты

received this money? How many wersts are there  
 получилъ этотъ деньги? Сколько (*gen.*) верста (*есть*) отъ

from this town to that? Of how many volumes  
 (*gen.*) этотъ городъ до (*gen.*) тотъ? Изъ (*gen.*) сколько томъ

is this work composed? How many roobles  
 сей сочиненіе состоятъ? По (*dat.*) сколько (*gen.*) рубль *т*

will fall to you to each of this profit?  
 достанется ты изъ (*gen.*) этотъ прибыль?

Thou thyself wilt be of my opinion: the sound even of his <sup>Determinative pronouns.</sup>  
 Ты самъ согласишься съ (*instr.*) я: звукъ сáмый онъ  
 voice is agreeable. I take this apartment of the  
 гóлосъ (*estъ*) пріятный. Я нанимáю сей кварти́ра у (*gen.*)  
 proprietor himself. Vices themselves find with you an  
 хозяи́нъ самъ. Поро́къ сáмый находятъ у (*gen.*) ты  
 excuse. He always speaks of himself. You are  
 извинѣ́ніе. Онъ всегда́ говоритъ о (*prep.*) себя́ самъ. Ты (*estѣ*)  
 discontented with yourselves. We have seen her herself.  
 недовóльный (*instr.*) себя́ самъ. Я ви́дѣли онъ самъ.  
 Death itself is not frightful. We all content ourselves  
 Смерть сáмый (*estъ*) не стра́шный. Я весь дово́лствуемся  
 with our only salaries. So think women alone. We  
 (*instr.*) оди́нъ жа́лованье. Такъ дѹмають жѣ́щчина оди́нъ. Я  
 two will serve God alone. In each assembly  
 óба хоти́мъ служи́ть (*dat.*) Бо́гъ еди́нъ. Въ (*prep.*) ка́ждый собра́ніе  
 there were citizens of both sexes. They are scattered  
 были гра́жданинъ óба по́ль. Онъ (*суть*) разсѣ́яны  
 in all the world. One must accustom one's self to  
 по (*dat.*) весь свѣтъ. На́добно приви́каты́ къ (*dat.*)  
 every food.  
 вся́кій пи́ща.

There is not anybody here; do not ask help of Indefinite  
 Нѣтъ (*gen.*) ни́кто здѣсь; не проси́ (*gen.*) по́мощь у (*gen.*) pronouns.  
 anybody. Thou eatest nothing, and that serves no  
 ни́кто. Ты не ѣшь (*gen.*) ни́что, и э́тотъ не годи́тся къ (*dat.*)  
 purpose. Learn something, and say that to somebody.  
 ни́что. Учи́сь (*dat.*) что́ ни́бу́дь, и скажи́ э́тотъ кто́ ни́бу́дь.  
 I will not sell my house for any thing in the world, and  
 Я не прода́мъ (*gen.*) свой до́мъ за (*acc.*) ни́что, и  
 you have sold yours for a mere nothing. Of nothing  
 ты про́дали свой за ни́что. Изъ (*gen.*) ни́что

one can make nothing. During the space of some  
 не сдѣлаешь (*gen.*) ничто́. Въ (*acc.*) течѣніе нѣсколько  
 months he has bought every day some  
 мѣсяць онъ покупалъ ежедневно по (*dat.*) нѣсколько (*gen.*)  
 hundreds of peasants.  
 сто душá.

The two sisters speak badly of each other. The  
 Оба сестра́ говорятъ дурно́ другъ о (*prep.*) другъ.

Englishmen and the French detest each other. We are  
 Англичани́нъ и Францу́зъ ненави́дятъ другъ дру́га. Я  
 going to take a walk with one another. These houses  
 ходимъ гуля́ть другъ съ (*instr.*) другъ. Сей домъ  
 are situated one behind the other. The boards are thrown  
 лежа́тъ одинъ за (*instr.*) друго́й. Доска́ (*суть*) набро́саны  
 one with another.  
 одинъ съ (*instr.*) друго́й.

## THE VERB.

Division of  
 verbs.

47. — The *verbs* (глаго́лы) of the Russian language are divided, according to their meaning, into four classes, which are called *voices* (зало́ги), viz:

1. The *active verbs* (дѣйстві́тельные), such as: дѣ́лать, *to make*; любі́ть, *to love*; мы́ть, *to wash*; одѣ́вать, *to clothe*.

2. The *pronominal verbs* (мѣстоимѣ́нные), formed of active verbs by means of the reflected pronoun *ся*, contracted from *себя́*. These verbs are: *a) reflected* (возвра́тные), as: мы́ться, *to wash one's self*; одѣ́ваться, *to dress one's self*; *b) reciprocal* (вза́имные), as: обнима́ться, *to embrace each other*;ссора́ться, *to dispute with each other*; and *c) common* (о́бщые), which with the termination of reflected



and reciprocal verbs have an active or neuter meaning, as: боя́ться, *to fear*; сме́яться, *to laugh*.

3. The *neuter* verbs (сре́дние), as: спать, *to sleep*; сто́ять, *to stand*. To this class also belong the *inchoative* (начина́тельные), as: бѣлѣть, *to whiten, become white*; со́хнуть, *to dry, become dry*. Among these verbs two are to be distinguished from the rest; viz: the neuter verb бы́ть, *to be*, and the inchoative стать, *to become*, which help to form and conjugate the other verbs, and which on that account are called *auxiliaries* ( вспомога́тельные).

4. The *passive* verbs (страда́тельные), as: бы́ть любима́ымъ, *to be loved*; бы́ть почита́емымъ, *to be venerated*; дѣло сдѣлано, *the thing is accomplished*.

The reflected voice is often used in the passive sense, especially when applied to inanimate objects, e. g. дѣло дѣлается, *the thing is being accomplished*; домъ стро́ится, *the house is being built*.

48. — The principal inflections of the Russian verbs are: *tense* (вре́мя), *aspect* (видѣ) and *mood* (накло́неніе), and the secondary inflections are: *person* (лицѣ), *number* (число́) and *gender* (родъ). Inflections of the verb.

49. — The *tenses* of the Russian verbs are only Tenses. three in number: 1) the *present* (настоящее вре́мя); 2) the *preterit* (проше́дшее), and 3) the *future* (бу́дущее), as: я чита́ю, *I read*; я чита́лъ, *I have read*; я бу́ду чита́ть, *I shall read*.

50. — Though the Russian verbs have only Aspects. these three tenses, they have other inflections to indicate duration, accomplishment, reiteration, or other circumstances accompanying the action. These shades, or varieties of meaning, to which the Russian grammarians have given the name of *aspects* or

*degrees*, are expressed by a change of termination or by means of the prepositions. The prepositions, being joined to verbs, form the *prepositional* (предложные) verbs, while such as have no preposition are termed *simple* (простые) or *a-prepositional*. This division of the verbs has an influence on the number and nature of their aspects. The following are the aspects of the Russian verbs.

1. The *imperfect* aspect (несовершенный видъ), which indicates that the action is being, has been, or will be performed without intimating, whether it is or will be finished; e. g. я дѣлаю, *I make*; я дѣлалъ, *I was occupied to make*; я буду дѣлать, *I shall make*; я просмáтриваю, *I examine*, я просмáтривалъ, *I set about examining*; я буду просмáтривать, *I shall examine*. This aspect is subdivided into definite and indefinite.

a) The *definite* (опредѣлённый) imperfect aspect indicates that the action is performed at a given moment: e. g. птица летѣтъ, *the bird flies (is flying now)*; заяцъ бѣжитъ, *the hare runs (is running at this moment)*.

b) The *indefinite* (неопредѣлённый) imperfect aspect expresses the action in an indeterminate manner, without reference to the time when it is performed, and also indicates that the acting person is accustomed to perform, or has the power of performing the action: e. g. птицы летаютъ, *the birds fly (have the power of flying)*; зайцы бѣгаютъ, *the hares run (are accustomed to run)*.

The definite and indefinite meaning of the imperfect aspect is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the case of verbs which express movement or change of place. The

other verbs, having properly speaking only the indefinite imperfect aspect, take the definite meaning without changing their termination; e. g. Васи́лий тепе́рь пьётъ ква́съ, *Basil is now drinking kwass*; Васи́лий пьётъ и ква́съ и во́ду, что попа́дётся, *Basil drinks both kwass and water, whichever happens to be there*.

2. The *perfect* aspect (соверше́нный), which indicates that the action has been, or will be entirely finished; e. g. я сдѣ́лалъ, *I have made, I have finished*; я сдѣ́лаю, *I shall make, I shall finish making*; я просмо́трьлѣ, *I have entirely examined*; я просмо́трю, *I shall finish examining*. This aspect is subdivided into aspect of duration and aspect of unity.

a) The perfect aspect of *duration* (длѣ́тельный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed by many movements, and has had or will have any duration; e. g. пті́цы вы́клевали́ ему́ глаза́, *the birds have put out his eyes with beak-strokes*; я пропою́ пѣ́сню, *I shall sing over this air*.

b) The perfect aspect of *unity* (однокра́тный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed only once, and has lasted only a moment; e. g. я зъвну́лѣ, *I have yawned, I have made a yawn*; онъ тро́нетъ ещё́ разъ ва́ше хла́дное се́рдце, *he will once more touch your insensible heart*; пті́ца вы́клюнула́ ему́ глаза́, *the bird has put out to him an eye*.

3. The *iterative* aspect (многokráтный), which indicates that the action has been performed repeatedly, and that it is long passed; e. g. въ молодѣ́я лѣ́та я жи́валѣ въ дере́внѣ, *in my youth I often lived in the country*.

On the subject of these aspects we have to make the following observations:

1. They are never all found in a single verb, as we shall see later. We merely observe in this place that the imperfect, perfect of unity and iterative aspects are found in the simple verbs, while the perfect of duration is met with in the prepositional and some few simple verbs, enumerated further (§ 65. 8). The aspects of a simple verb are generally distinguished in the following manner: the *definite imperfect* aspect is found in verbs signifying movement; e. g. бѣгý, *I run (am running now)*; идý, *I go (am going at this moment)*; the aspect *perfect of unity* is found in verbs which designate a physical action of men or animals, and ends in нуть (preterit нулъ, future ну); e. g. шагнýть, *to take a step*; кашлянýть, *to cough once*; the *iterative* aspect usually ends in ывать or увать (preterit ывалъ or увалъ): e. g. дѣлывалъ, *he usually made*; говаривалъ, *he said at different times*. The other simple verbs, which have not these distinctive characters, are of the *indefinite imperfect* aspect. All these properties of the verbs will be examined subsequently (§§ 59—65).

2. The prepositions are particles which are joined to verbs to communicate to them the meaning of the completion of an action: e. g. дѣлать, *to make*, and сдѣлать, *to finish making, to have made*; писать, *to write*; and написать, *to finish writing, to have written*; and also to give them a particular meaning; e. g. хотѣть, *to go*, and входить, *to go in*; восходить, *to go up*; выходить, *to go out*; доходить, *to go up to, to attain*, &c.

3. The aspects have not all the same number of tenses; the imperfect aspect is used in all the three tenses; the perfect is employed in the preterit and future, while the iterative is met with only in the preterit.

Moods. 51. — The Russian verbs have only three *moods*, viz: 1) the *indicative* (изъявительное наклонѣніе), e. g. я хожý, *I walk*; мы гуляли, *we have taken a walk*, вы будете ѣжинать, *you will sup*; 2) the *imperative* (повелительное), e. g. ходи, *walk*; пойдемте, *let us go*; гуляйте, *take a walk*; and 3) the



*infinitive* (неокончательное), e. g. ходить, *to walk*; гулять, *to take a walk*; ужинать, *to sup.*—The indicative is the only mood which is found in all the tenses and all the aspects, the infinitive has inflections for the aspects, but has no tenses, as is also the case with the imperative, except that it is not used in the iterative aspect.

The *conditional* (предположительное) and *subjunctive* (сослагательное) moods of other languages are expressed in Russian by the preterit of indicative with the particle *бы*; e. g. я желалъ бы ѣхать, *I should wish* or *I should have wished to depart*; я бы не думалъ, чтобы вы это сдѣлали, *I should not have believed that you would have done that*.

52.—The indicative and imperative of the Russian verbs have further: 1) three inflections for the *persons*, e. g. читаю, *I read*; читаешь, *thou readest*; читаетъ, *he reads*; 2) two for the *numbers*; читаю, *I read*, and читаемъ, *we read*; читаешь, *thou readest*, and читаете, *you read*; читаетъ, *he reads*, and читаютъ, *they read*; читай, *read*, and читайте, *read (you)*; and 3) in the singular of the preterits, three for the *genders*, e. g. ученикъ читалъ, *the school-boy read*; дитя читало, *the child read*; служанка читала, *the maid read*.

The preterit of the Russian verbs is nothing but the past participle, in the apocopated form, joined to the substantive verb, which participle, like the attributive adjectives, was used, in the ecclesiastical Slavonic, in the apocopated termination, and with the three genders, e. g. азъ есмь сѣтворилъ, *I have created*; имѣла еси, *thou hast had* (in speaking to a woman). In Russian the auxiliary verb is understood, and we say: я сотворилъ, ты имѣла, and on this account the genders have become an inflection of the preterits.

There are some verbs which are only used in the third person singular, without expressing the person either by a



noun or a pronoun, and which for that reason are called *impersonal* (безличныя). These verbs have only the neuter in the preterit; such are: *нѣтъ*, *there is not* (*pret.* нѣ было, *fut.* не бѣдетъ); *разсвѣтаетъ*, *it begins to dawn* (*pret.* разсвѣло, *fut.* разсвѣтѣтъ); *хочется*, *the mind takes* (*pret.* хотѣлось).

Forms deriv-  
ed from the  
verb.

53.—To complete our examination of all the parts of the Russian verbs, we will still add the forms which are derived from them; these are: 1) the *participle* (причѣтіе), 2) the *gerund* (дѣепричѣтіе), and 3) the *verbal noun* (отглагольное имя).

1. The *participles*, as parts of the verb, have voice, aspect and tense; and as adjectives, gender, number and case. As regards *voice*, they are active, neuter or pronominal, and passive; they have the same number of *aspects* as the verbs from which they are derived; but they have only two *tenses*, the present and the preterit.

2. The *gerunds* are simply verbal adverbs, which are formed from the active and neuter participles and can take the different aspects of the present and preterit.

3. The *verbal nouns* are abstract nouns which being derived from the infinitive, indicate the particular action, expressed by the aspect, from which they are formed; e. g. бѣганіе, *an habitual running*; разбиваніе, *a defeat*; разби́тіе, *a complete defeat* (from the infinitives бѣгать, разбивать and разби́ть).

Conjugation. 54.—The changing of the inflections of the verbs in order to indicate the moods,\* tenses, numbers, persons and genders, is called *conjugation* (спряженіе); and the verbs are divided, according to the

manner in which they are conjugated, into *regular* (п<sup>р</sup>а́вильные) and *irregular* (неп<sup>р</sup>а́вильные). 1) The *regular* verbs are such as have a polysyllabic infinitive, ending in *ть* preceded by a vowel; e. g. дѣлать, *to make*; гулять, *to take a walk*; имѣть, *to have*; говорить, *to speak*; колѳть, *to sting*; тянуть, *to draw*; терѣть, *to rub*. 2) The *irregular* verbs are such as have a monosyllabic infinitive, ending either in *ть* preceded by a consonant, or in *чь, ти* and *щу*; e. g. бить, *to beat*; брать, *to take*; слыть, *to pass for*; вѣсть, *to conduct*; грызть, *to gnaw*; итти, *to go*; сѣчь, *to cut*.—The following remarks on the conjugation of verbs are important.

1. Each aspect of a verb, having necessarily an infinitive, is conjugated separately, without being mixed up with the other aspects of this verb.

2. The *infinitive* in verbs is the same as the nominative in nouns: this mood is the *direct* form, whence all the others, called the *oblique*, are derived. It ends in *ть* (seldom in *чь, ти, щу*).

3. The *present*, which is only found in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite), ends, in the first person of the singular, in *ю* or *у* (very rarely in *мъ* and *мь*).

4. The *preterit*, which is found in all the aspects, ends in *лъ* and sometimes in *ъ* (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*; plur. *ли*).

5. The *future* has no particular inflection: in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite) it is formed by the help of the auxiliary verbs бѣду or стѣну, joined to the infinitive; and in the perfect aspect (either of duration or of unity) this tense takes the form of the present.

6. The *imperative*, which is found in all the aspects, excepting the iterative aspect, ends, in the second person singular, in *и* with the accent, or, without accent, in *у* after two or three consonants, in *ь* after one consonant and in *и* after a vowel.



ACTIVE, NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL.

SECOND					THIRD.	
3rd branch.	4th branch.	5th branch.	6th branch.	7th branch.	1st branch.	2d branch.
ис ч нтъ ш атъ щ	д нтъ з ѣтъ з атъ з нтъ д	т нтъ т атъ ѣтъ к	с нтъ с атъ ѣтъ х	ст нтъ ск атъ ѣтъ ст	нутъ.	ереть
ж { у ншь ч { нтъ ш нмъ щ { нте аъ	ису ису ншь жешъ д { нтъ жетъ з { нмъ жемъ нте жете ятъ жутъ	чу чу ншь чешъ тнть четъ тнмъ чемъ тнте чете тятъ чутъ	шу шу сншь шешъ ситъ шетъ снмъ шемъ сите шете сятъ шутъ	шу шу стинъ щешъ стятъ щетъ стямъ щемъ стите щете стятъ щутъ	ну нешъ нетъ немъ нете нутъ	ру решъ ретъ ремъ рете рутъ
ж { нлъ ч { алъ ш { нли щ { али	д { нлъ г з алъ ѣлъ д з { нли г з али ѣли д	т { нлъ т алъ ѣлъ к т { нли т али ѣли к	с { нлъ с алъ ѣлъ х с { нли с али ѣли х	ст { нлъ ск алъ ѣлъ ст ст { нли ск али ѣли ст	{ нулъ ѣ, ло, ла { нули ли	еръ, ерю, ла ер.ли
either	definite	or	indefinite)	for	the	three conjugations.
ж { љ ч { ѣ ш { љте щ { ѣте	д { љ ж љ з { љте ж љте ѣте ж ѣте	т { љ ч љ ѣте ч ѣте	с { љ ш љ ѣте ш ѣте	сти щя	н љ н ѣте н ѣте	ря г љте

Regular  
verbs.

55.—The *regular* verbs are divided into three *conjugations*, according to the ending of the infinitive and the formation of the first person of the present.

1. The *first* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *mb* with one of the vowels *a*, *я* or *ь*, and of which the first person singular of the present is in *ю* with a vowel. This conjugation is subdivided into four *branches*, viz:

	1st branch.	2d branch.	3rd branch.	4th branch.
Infinitive:	ать . . . . .	о е вать . . . . .	ять . . . . .	ѣть
Present:	аю . . . . .	у ю . . . . .	яю . . . . .	ѣю

Examples: 1) дѣлать, *to make*, дѣлаю; 2) рисо́вать, *to draw*, рисую; плева́ть, *to spit*, плюю; 3) гуля́ть, *to take a walk*, гуляю; 4) имѣ́ть, *to have*, имѣю.

2. The *second* conjugation embraces such verbs as end in the infinitive in *mb* preceded by *u* or *o*, and by other vowels with a changeable consonant, and the first person in the present of which is in *ю* preceded by a consonant (sometimes by a vowel) or, according to the nature of the hissing letters, in *иу*, *чу*, *шу* and *щу*. This conjugation is subdivided into 7 *branches*, in the following order:

	1st br.	2d br.	3rd br.	4th br.	5th br.	6th br.	7th br.
Infinitive:	б и в ить ѣть м ѣть о п ать ф	ж ч ить ш ать щ	л ѣть з ать	т ить ѣть аь	с ить ѣть аь	ст ить ѣть аь	щ ить ѣть аь

Present: ю . . лю . у . . жу . . чу . . шу . . щу.

Examples: 1) говорѣ́ть, *to speak*, говорю; велѣ́ть, *to order*, велю; колѣ́ть, *to sting*, колю; 2) любѣ́ть, *to love*, люблю; терпѣ́ть,



*to suffer*, терплю; дремать, *to slumber*, дремлю; 3) тужить, *to grieve*, тужу; кричать, *to cry*, кричу; 4) водить, *to lead*, вожу; видеть, *to see*, вижу; мазать, *to anoint*, мажу; 5) платить, *to pay*, плачу; вертеть, *to turn*, верчу; плакать, *to weep*, плачу; 6) просить, *to ask*, прошу; висеть, *to be suspended*, вису; пахать, *to cultivate*, пашу; 7) чистить, *to clean*, чищу; хрустеть, *to crack*, хрущу; искать, *to seek*, ищу.

3. The *third* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *нутъ* and in *ветъ*, the first person of which is in *у* preceded by a palatal consonant (*н, р*). This conjugation is subdivided into 2 branches, thus:

	1st branch.	2d branch.
Infinitive: . . . . .	нутъ . . . . .	ветъ
Present: . . . . .	ну . . . . .	ру

Examples: 1) тянуть, *to draw*, тяну; 2) тереть, *to rub*, тру.

The three conjugations of the regular verbs and their various branches, as also the inflections of the moods, tenses and persons, are shown in the preceding table (pages 120 sq.).

56.—In the conjugation of the regular verbs the following rules relating to the formation of the various inflections are to be attended to.

Formation  
of the in-  
flections of  
the verb.

1. The *second person* of the present is formed: *a*) from the first person in all the verbs of the Ist and IIId conjugation, as also in those of the IIId in *омъ*, and in *амъ* when not preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *ю* or *у* into *ешь*; *b*) from the infinitive in the verbs of the IIId conjugation ending in *умъ*, *нъмъ*, and in *амъ* preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *умъ*, *нъмъ* or *амъ* into *ишь*. The other persons are formed from the second. The present has generally the following inflections:

PERSONS:	1.				2.				3.				4.			
	SINGULAR.															
1.	. . . .	Ю	. . . . .	У	. . . . .	Ю	. . . . .	У								
2.	. . . .	ЕШЬ	. . . . .	ЕШЬ	. . . . .	ИШЬ	. . . . .	ИШЬ								
3.	. . . .	ЕТЬ	. . . . .	ЕТЬ	. . . . .	ИТЬ	. . . . .	ИТЬ								
	PLURAL.															
1.	. . . .	ЕМЪ	. . . . .	ЕМЪ	. . . . .	ИМЪ	. . . . .	ИМЪ								
2.	. . . .	ЕТЕ	. . . . .	ЕТЕ	. . . . .	ИТЕ	. . . . .	ИТЕ								
3.	. . . .	ЮТЬ	. . . . .	УТЬ	. . . . .	ЯТЬ	. . . . .	ЯТЬ (АТЬ)								
For verbs of the I conjug. and for those in <i>омъ</i> , 1st br. and in <i>амъ</i> , 2d br. of the II conj. (See the parad. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 10 and 12.)				For verbs of the III conj. and for those in <i>амъ</i> , 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. of the II conj. (See the paradigms 15, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24 and 25.)				For verbs of the II conj. 1st and 2d br. (except those in <i>омъ</i> and in <i>амъ</i> ). (See the paradigms 8, 9, and 11.)				For verbs of the II conj., 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except those in <i>амъ</i> not preceded by a hissing letter). (See the paradigms 13, 14, 16, 18 and 20.)				

The third person of the plural ends in *амъ* (instead of *ятъ*) after the hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), and this for the verbs of the third branch of the II d conjugation. (See paradigm 13).

2. The *preterit* in verbs of the Ist and II d conjugation is formed from the infinitive by changing *ть* into *лъ* (*fem.* ла, *neut.* ло; *plur.* ли). The inchoative verbs of the III d conjugation syncopate the termination *нулъ* into *ъ* (*fem.* ла, *neut.* ло; *plur.* ли), by suppressing the consonant *л* in the masculine, when no vowel immediately precedes; e. g. сохъ, вялъ (*fem.* сохла, вяла, *neut.* сохло, вяло), instead of сохнулъ, вянулъ, from сохнуть, *to dry*; вянуть, *to fade*. Occasionally the full form is used: e. g. мёрзнуть, *to freeze*, мёрзнулъ; but in the inchoative prepositional verbs, the preterit is almost always syncopated, and this sometimes happens also in the aspect perfect of unity; e. g. замёрзнуть, *to freeze*, замёрзъ, вздвигнуть, *to erect*, вздвигъ (instead of замёрзнулъ, вздвигнулъ).

The non-inchoative verbs, as also the perfect aspect of unity, retain the termination *нулъ*; e. g. тянулъ, двинулъ, from тянуть, *to draw*; двинуть, *to move once*. The verbs of the 2d branch of the III d conjugation also syncopate the termination of the preterit. (See the paradigms 22, 23, 24 and 25.)

3. The *imperative* ends in the second person of the singular in *и*, *ь*, *и* or *й*, and is formed from the second person of

the present (or from the future, in the perfect aspect of duration or of unity), by changing *ешь* or *ишь*:

a) into *ѣ*, if the accent is on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 22);

b) into *ѵ*, if the accent is not on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 13, 14, 17 and 24);

c) into *и*, if, without having the accent, the termination of the inf. is preceded by two or three consonants (paradigms 20 & 23);

d) into *ѣ*, if the inflection *ешь* or *ишь* of the second person is preceded by a vowel (paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 9). The verbs in *ишь* preceded by a vowel, and with the accent on the last syllable, also take the inflection *ѣ*, e. g. тайть, *to hide*; поить, *to water*; клеить, *to paste*; imper.: тай, пои, клей.

The second person of the plural is formed by adding the syllable *те* to the inflection of the second person of the singular. The other persons have no peculiar inflection. The first person of the plural takes that of the future; e. g. будемъ учиться, *let us study*; пойдёмъ, *let us go*, and sometimes adding the syllable *те*, пойдёте. The third person in both numbers takes that of the present or the future, preceded by the conjunctions *пусть* or *да*, e. g. пусть говоритъ, *let him speak*; да здравствуетъ, *let him live*; да будутъ, *let them be*.

The second person singular of the imperative is sometimes used with the personal pronouns of the first and third person, in order to express the *conditional* mood; e. g. сдѣлай это я, *if I should do that*; сдѣлай это онъ, *if he were to do that*; instead of *если бы я* (or *онъ*) *это сдѣлалъ*. In the same manner the phrases: сохрани Богъ, *God preserve!* дай Богъ, *God grant!* take the place of the *optative* mood.

*Rem.* There are some regular verbs which deviate slightly from the general rules, undergoing a trifling change either in the 1st person of the pres., or in the imper., as we shall subsequently point out. We remark lastly that there is but one verb which has its imper. in *ѵ*; it is the irregular verb лечь, *to lie down*; imper.: лягъ, pl. лягте.

57.—Observing these different rules for the formation of the moods, tenses and persons, the active, neuter and pronominal regular Russian verbs are conjugated according to the 25 following paradigms.

Paradigms  
of the con-  
jugations of  
regular  
verbs.

## PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUGATIONS

CONJUGATIONS: . . .	PARADIGMS: . . .	BRANCHES: . . .	I. INFINITIVE.	II. INDICATIVE.					
				I. PRESENT.					
				Singular.			Plural.		
FIRST	1.	1.	дѣлать, to make. . . . .	дѣлаю,	дѣла-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		2.	толковать, to explain. . . . .	толкую,	толкѣ-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		3.	воевать, to war . . . . .	воюю,	вою-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		4.	жевать, to chew. . . . .	жую,	жу-ёшь,	ётъ;	ёмъ,	ёте,	ютъ.
		5.	гулять, to take a walk. . . . .	гуляю,	гуля-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		6.	сѣять, to sow. . . . .	сѣю,	сѣ-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		7.	желтѣть, to grow yellow.	желтѣю,	желтѣ-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
SECOND	1.	8.	хвалить, to praise. . . . .	хваляю,	хвал-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
		9.	строить, to build. . . . .	строю,	стрѣ-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
		10.	колѣть, to sting. . . . .	колю,	кол-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
	2.	11.	любить, to love. . . . .	люблю,	люб-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
		12.	дремать, to slumber. . . . .	дремлю,	дремл-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
	3.	13.	мучить, to torment. . . . .	мучу,	муч-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
		14.	ладить, to tune. . . . .	лажу,	лад-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
	4.	15.	вязать, to tie. . . . .	вяжу,	вяж-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		16.	платить, to pay. . . . .	плачу,	плат-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
	5.	17.	плакать, to weep. . . . .	плачу,	плач-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		18.	просить, to ask. . . . .	прошу,	прос-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
THIRD	1.	19.	писать, to write. . . . .	пишу,	пиш-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		20.	чищать, to clean. . . . .	чищу,	чист-ишь,	ишь;	имъ,	ите,	ятъ.
		21.	искать, to seek. . . . .	ищу,	ищ-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
THIRD	1.	22.	тянуть, to draw. . . . .	тяну,	тян-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		23.	сохнуть, to dry. . . . .	сохну,	сохн-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		24.	вѣнуть, to fade. . . . .	вѣну,	вѣн-еши,	еши;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
	2.	25.	терѣть, to rub. . . . .	тру,	тр-ёшь,	ётъ;	ёмъ,	ёте,	ютъ.

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the conjugations of regular verbs, the following rules are to be observed.

1. The first person of the present takes the accent of the infinitive, with the exception of the verbs in *овѣтъ* and *евѣтъ*, in which the last syllable is accented. These verbs transfer the accent on the penultima, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb; but if the syllable *ов* or *ев* belongs to the root of the verb, they preserve the accent on the last syllable; thus толковать, воевать (parad. 2 and 3) have in the present толкую, воюю; while жевать (parad. 4) has жую; and also ковать, to forge, кою; плевать, to spit, плюю. The other persons of the present preserve the accent of the first person, with the exception of several verbs of the IIId and IIIId conjugation, accented on the last syllable, which transfer the accent on the penultima in the second and other persons of the singular and plural. (See the paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22.)



## GATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS.

## C A T I V E.

## III. IMPERATIVE.

II. PRETERIT.				III. FUTURE.		2d pers.	
Singular.			Plural.			Sing.	Plur.
masc.	neut.	fem.					
я, ты, онъ (n. онѣ, f. онѣ)			мы, вы, онѣ (f. онѣ)	бѣду or стану (ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ) with the infinitive.			
дѣлалъ,	аю,	ала;	дѣлали.			дѣлай,	йте.
толковалъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	толковали.			толкуй,	йте.
воевалъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	воевали.			воюй,	йте.
жевалъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	жевали.			жуй,	йте.
гулялъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	гуляли.			гуляй,	ите.
сѣялъ,	яю,	яла;	сѣяли.			сѣй,	ите.
желтелъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	желтели.			желтай,	ите.
я, ты, онъ (n. онѣ, f. онѣ)			мы, вы, онѣ (f. онѣ)				
хвалилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	хвалили.			хвали,	ите.
строилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	строили.			строй,	ите.
колѣлъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	колѣли.			колѣй,	ите.
любилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	любили.			люби,	ите.
дремалъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	дремали.			дремли,	ите.
мучилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	мучили.			мучь,	ьте.
ладилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	ладили.			ладь,	ьте.
вязалъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	вязали.			вяжи,	ите.
платилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	платили.			плати,	ите.
плакалъ,	аю,	ала;	плакали.			плачь,	ьте.
просилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	просили.			проси,	ите.
писалъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	писали.			пиши,	ите.
чистилъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	чистили.			чисти,	ите.
искалъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	искали.			ищи,	ите.
я, ты, онъ			мы, вы, онѣ				
тянулъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	тянули.			тяни,	ите.
сѣхъ,	хлю,	хла;	сѣхли.			сѣхни,	ите.
вѣлъ,	ѣлю,	ѣла;	вѣли.			вѣнь,	ьте.
тѣрѣ,	рлю,	рла;	тѣрѣли.			три.	ите.

2. The preterit retains the accentuation of the infinitive, and that in all the inflections, excepted родить, to bring forth, pret. родилъ, f. родила, n. родило, pl. родили, and some verbs of the III conjugation, which, as well as the irregular verbs, follow the rules of adjectives in the apocopated termination, i. e. the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the feminine gender, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural, as we shall see later.

3. The accentuation of the imperative is above indicated in the formation of this mood.

4. The pronominal verbs preserve the accentuation of the active verbs; however some of these verbs transfer the accent to the reflected pronoun сѣ, as родилсѣ, he is born, заперсѣ, it shut itself up; but that happens only in the masculine gender; in the feminine and neuter, as well as in the plural, the accent is placed on the syllable which precedes the pronoun (родилась, заперлась, &c.). This transferring happens above all in the monosyllable verbs, as звался, взялся, дался, &c.



First conjugation.

According to the 1st paradigm (дѣлать) are conjugated verbs in *амь*, as well simple as prepositional (with the exception of those in *овать* and *евать*, which belong to the three following paradigms, and of several in *амь*, which are of the second conjugation). Such are:

Болтать, to shake, *pres.* болтаю.  
Вѣнчать, to crown, вѣнчаю.  
Дерзать, to dare, дерзаю.  
Думать, to think, думаю.  
Ласкать, to caress, ласкаю.  
Пытать, to assay, пытаю.  
Печатать, to print, печатаю.  
Работать, to work, работаю.  
Питать, to nourish, питаю.  
Нюхать, to smell, нюхаю.  
Терзать, to worry, терзаю.  
Умничать, to subtilize, умничаю.  
Ужасать, to terrify, ужасаю.

Уповать, to hope, *pres.* уповаю.  
Обожать, to adore, обожаю.  
Отвѣчать, to answer, отвѣчаю.  
Общѣать, to promise, общѣаю.  
Отдѣлывать, to finish, отдѣлываю.  
Усматривать, to perceive, усматриваю.  
Закрывать, to cover, закрываю.  
Надмевать, to render proud, надмеваю.  
Обуревать, to agitate, обуреваю.  
Отмщевать, to avenge, отмщеваю.  
Здороваться, to salute, здороваюсь.  
Касаться, to concern, касаюсь.  
Намѣриваться, to purpose, -ваюсь.

Also давать, to give, as the prepositional verbs узнавать, to know; доставать, to procure (and with other prepositions) and создавать, to build, which have in the present: даю, узнаю, достаю and создаю, and in the imperative: давай, узнавай, доставай and создавай. — Some prepositional verbs in *ывать*, e. g. показывать, to show; указывать, to indicate; помазывать, to anoint; исповѣдывать, to confess, belong also to the following branch, having the present tense in *ываю* and in *ую*: показываю and показую, помазываю and помазую, &c.

According to the 2nd paradigm (толковать) are conjugated verbs in *овать* (with the exception of *уповать* and *здороваться* which belong to the precedent paradigm), which have in the present *ую*, observing that those in *овать* accented on the last syllable transfer the accent to *у*, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb, but they preserve it on the last syllable, if the syllable *ов* belongs to the root of the verb. Such are:

Ворковать, to soo, *pres.* воркую.  
Торговать, to traffic, торгую.  
Баловать, to cocker, балую.  
Ковать, to forge, кую.  
Сновать, to wag, сную.  
Совать, to shove, сую.

Зимовать, to winter, *pres.* зимую.  
Именовать, to name, именую.  
Цѣловать, to kiss, цѣлую.  
Рисовать, to draw, рисую.  
Образовать, to form, образую.  
Радовать, to rejoice, радую.

Трѣбовать, to require, *pres.* трѣбую. Привѣтствовать, to welcome, *pres.*  
 Чувствовать, to feel, чувствую. привѣтствую.  
 Совѣтовать, to counsel, совѣтую. Повиноваться, to obey, повинуюсь.  
 Миловать, to have pity, милую.

According to the 3d paradigm (воевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* (with the exception of those in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant, which belong to the following paradigm, and of *надмевать*, *обуреывать*, *отмищевать* and *наимьреваться*, which belong to the first paradigm), which have in the present *юю*, with the same observation relatively to the tonic accent as for verbs in *овать*. Such are:

Горевать, to grieve, *pres.* горюю. Клевать, to peck, *pres.* клюю.  
 Дневать, to pass the day, днюю. Плевать, to spit, плюю.  
 Утренневать, to pass the morning. Блевать, to vomit, блюю.  
 Малевать, to paint, малюю. [-нюю. Пеклевать, to bolt, деклюю.

According to the 4th paradigm (жевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), which have in the present *юю* (instead of *юю*); such are:

Врачевать, to cure, *pres.* врачую. Тушевать, to wash a drawing, *pres.*  
 Кочевать, to nomadize, кочую. тушую.  
 Ночевать, to pass the night, ночую. Хвощевать, to rub with horse-tail,  
 Межевать, to survey, межую. хвощую.  
 Бушевать, to howl, бушую. Пощевать, to regale, пощую.

This last verb is also written *пощивать*, and then it belongs to the first branch, having in the present: *пощиваю*.

According to the 5th paradigm (гулять) are conjugated all the verbs in *ять* preceded by a consonant, as well simple as prepositional, and also four simple verbs in *ять* preceded by a vowel, and some prepositional verbs in *оять*, in which *ять* is contracted from *увать*. These verbs have the present in *аю*. Such are:

Валать, to roll, *pres.* валяю. Утолять, to quench, *pres.* утоляю.  
 Вонять, to stink, воняю. Извинять, to excuse, извиняю.  
 Кашлять, to cough, кашляю. Повѣрять, to verify, повѣряю.  
 Мѣнять, to change, мѣняю. Утомлять, to fatigue, утомляю.  
 Козырять, to trump, козыряю. Ваять, to sculpture, ваюю.  
 Кривлять, to contort, кривляю. Зіять, to gape, зіяю.  
 Терять, to lose, теряю. Паять, to solder, паяю.  
 Стрѣлять, to shoot, стрѣляю. Сіять, to shine, сіяю.  
 Являть, to show, являю. Устройать, to arrange, устраюю.  
 Кланяться, to salute, кланяюсь. Удвойать, to double, удваюю.

According to the 6th paradigm (сѣять) are conjugated verbs in *ять* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those which belong to the precedent paradigm, and of *стоять* and *бояться*, which belong to the first branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation). They have the present in *ю*; such are:

Баять, to speak, *pres.* баю.

Блѣять, to bleat, блею.

Вопіять, to cry, вопію.

Вѣять, to blow, вѣю.

Граять, to croak, граю.

Лелѣять, to cocker, лелѣю.

Таять, to thaw, *pres.* таю.

Чаять, to hope, чаю.

Чуять, to hear, чую.

Каяться, to do penance, каюсь.

Маяться, to languish, маюсь.

Смѣяться, to laugh, смѣюсь.

According to the 7th paradigm (желтѣть) are conjugated the inchoative and some other verbs in *ѣть*, which have the present in *ю*, (the non-inchoative in *ѣть* belong to the various branches of the second conjugation). Such are:

Блѣѣть, to grow white, *pres.* блѣю.

Голубѣть, to become azure, голубѣю.

Соловѣть, to grow light bay, соловѣю.

Рябѣть, to become freckled, рябѣю.

Краснѣть, to grow red, краснѣю.

Владѣть, to possess, владѣю.

Глазѣть, to gaze, глазѣю.

Говѣть, to keep fast, говѣю.

Долѣть, to overcome, долѣю.

Жалѣть, to have pity, жалѣю.

Синѣть, to grow blue, синѣю.

Свѣѣть, to grow grey, свѣѣю.

Рыжѣть, to grow rufous, *pres.* рыжѣю.

Грубѣть, to grow harsh, грубѣю.

Чернѣть, to grow black, чернѣю.

Потѣть, to sweat, потѣю.

Пламенѣть, to flame, пламенѣю.

Колѣть, to starve, колѣю.

Коснѣть, to linger, коснѣю.

Печатлѣть, to impress, печатлѣю.

Имѣть, to have, имѣю.

Умѣть, to know, умѣю.

Радѣть, to take care, радѣю.

Болѣть, to ache, болѣю.

The verb *болѣть* belongs also to the first branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation, having in the present *болѣю* and *болѣю*, *болѣешь* and *болѣишь*, &c. — The prepositional verb *выздоровѣть*, to recover (perfect aspect of *выздора́вливать*), belongs also to the second branch of the II<sup>d</sup> conjugation, having in the future *выздоровѣю* and *выздоровѣю*, but only in the first person, the others being: *выздоровѣешь*, *еть*, &c.

Second  
conjugation.

According to the 8th paradigm (хвалѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ѣть* preceded by a palatal consonant (л, н, р), and also by another consonant, as those, non-inchoative, in *лѣть*, *нѣть*, *рѣть*, observing that several verbs of the second conjugation, accented in the infinitive and in the first person of the present on the last syllable, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. Such are:

Бранить, to scold, <i>pres.</i> браню, бранишь.	Коймить, to edge, <i>pres.</i> коймю, -ишь.
Веселить, to divert, веселю, веселишь.	Клеймить, to stamp, клеймю, -ишь.
Винить, to accuse, виню, винишь.	Гудить, to fiddle, гудю, гудишь.
Вѣрять, to believe, вѣрю, вѣришь.	Дудить, to pipe, дудю, дудишь.
Говорить, to speak, говорю, говоришь.	Мерзять, to abhor, мерзю, мерзишь.
Смолить, to pitch, смолю, смолишь.	Тузить, to cuff, тузю, тузишь.
Дѣлить, to divide, дѣлю, дѣлишь.	Кудесить, to juggle, кудесю, кудесишь.
Скоблить, to scrape, скоблю, скоблишь.	Чудесить, to behave oddly, чудесю, чудесишь.
Дразнить, to provoke, дразню, дразнишь.	Велѣть, to order, велю, велишь.
Хоронить, to hide, хороню, хоронишь.	Горѣть, to burn, горю, горяишь.
Кури́ть, to smoke, ку́рю, ку́ришь.	Звенѣть, to sound, звеню, звенишь.
Варить, to boil, варию, варишь.	Смотрѣть, to look, смотрю, смотришь.

And also *мы́слить*, to think, which changes *c* into *ш* in the first person of the present: *мы́шлю*, *мы́слишь*, &c.: *imperative*: *мы́сли*; and the prepositional verb *изостри́ть*, to sharpen (perfect aspect of *изоштрѣть*), which changes *ст* into *ш* in the first person of the future: *изоштрѣю*, *изоштрѣишь*, &c.

According to the 9th paradigm (*стро́ить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* preceded by a vowel, as the two simple verbs in *оать*, observing that the verbs in *ить* of this branch, accented on the last syllable, have the imperative in *и́*. Such are:

Двойть, to double, <i>pres.</i> двою; <i>imp.</i> двой.	Стоить, to cost, <i>pres.</i> стою; <i>imp.</i> стой.
Дойть, to milk, дою; дои́.	Своить, to appropriate, свою; свой.
Клейть, to glue, клею; клеи́.	Покойть, to give repose, покою; покой.
Пойть, to give to drink, пою; пои́.	Ройться, to swarm, рою; роися.
Кройть, to cut, крою; крои́.	Стаиться, to fly in flocks, стаюсь; стаися.
Струить, to pour, струю; струи́.	Бойться, to fear, боюсь; бойся.
Тайть, to hide, таю; таи́.	Стоять, to stand, стою; стой.

According to the 10th paradigm (*колóть*) are conjugated verbs in *оть*, as two verbs in *ать*; these are:

Борóть, to vanquish, <i>pres.</i> борю, борешь.	Порóть, to rip, <i>pres.</i> порю, порешь.
Борóться, to wrestle, борю́сь, бо́-	Глаго́латъ, to say, глаго́лю, глаго́-
Поло́ть, to weed, по́лю, по́лешь.	лешь.
	Ора́ть, to plough, орю, орешь.

And also *молóть*, to grind, which has in the present: *мелю́*, *мелешь*, &c. and in the imperative *мели́* (instead of *молю́*, *молѣшь*, *молѣи́*, not to be confounded with *молю́*, *мо́лишь*,



моли, from *мо́лить*, *to pray*). — The verb *о́рать* in the sense of *to cry* belongs to the third conjugation.

According to the 11th paradigm (*люби́ть*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* preceded by a labial consonant (б, в, м, п, ф), as the non-inchoatives in *бѣть*, *мѣть*, *пѣть*, which insert the consonant *л* in the first person of the present (with the exception of *кле́йми́ть* and *ко́йми́ть*, which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation, of *ими́ть* and *у́ми́ть*, which belong to the 4th branch of the I st conjugation, and of *шибѣ́ть*, which belongs to the first branch of the III d conjugation). Such are:

Руби́ть, to hew, <i>pres.</i> рублю́, ру́бишь.	Рѣзвѣ́ться, to sport, <i>pres.</i> рѣзвлю́сь, рѣзвѣ́шься.
Зноби́ть, to chill, зноблю́, зноби́шь.	Скорбѣ́ть, to sorrow, скорблю́, рби́шь.
Груби́ть, to be saucy, грублю́, груби́шь.	Свербѣ́ть, to itch, сверблю́, сверби́шь.
Лови́ть, to catch, ловлю́, лови́шь.	Гремѣ́ть, to thunder, гремлю́, греми́шь.
Гото́вить, to prepare, гото́влю, гото́вишь.	Шумѣ́ть, to racket, шумлю́, шуми́шь.
Дыми́ть, to smoke, дымлю́, дыми́шь.	Кипѣ́ть, to boil, киплю́, кипи́шь.
Корми́ть, to nourish, кормлю́, корми́шь.	Корпи́ть, to work, корплю́, корпи́шь.
То́пить, to heat, топлю́, то́пишь.	Сопѣ́ть, to wheeze, соплю́, со́пишь.
Лѣпи́ть, to mould, лѣплю́, лѣпи́шь.	Скрипѣ́ть, to creak, скриплю́, скри́пишь.
Графи́ть, to rule, графлю́, графи́шь.	Терпи́ть, to suffer, терплю́, терпи́шь.
Трафи́ть, to hit, трафлю́, трафи́шь.	Храпи́ть, to snore, храплю́, храпи́шь.
Нрави́ться, to please, нра́влюсь, нра́висься.	Хрипи́ть, to croak, хриплю́, хрипи́шь.
	Шипѣ́ть, to hiss, шиплю́, шипи́шь.

And also the prepositional verb *у́мертви́ть*, *to put to death* (perfect aspect of *у́мерщвля́ть*), which changes *т* into *ц* in the first person of the future: *у́мерщвлю́*, *у́мертви́шь*, &c.

According to the 12th paradigm (*дрема́ть*) are conjugated verbs in *ать*, *ма́ть*, *па́ть*, which insert also the consonant *л* in the first person of the present, and retain it in the other persons as in all the inflections derivated from this first person. These are:

Зыба́ть, to wave, <i>pres.</i> зыблю́, зы́блешь.	And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. [зоба́ю.
Колѣба́ть, to shake, колеблю́, ко́лѣ-блешь.	Зоба́ть, to peck up, <i>pres.</i> зоблю́ and Ка́пать, to drop, ка́плю and ка́паю.
Клепа́ть, to impute, клеплю́, кле́-плешь.	Кра́пать, to dash, кра́плю and кра́паю.
Трепа́ть, to scutch, треплю́, трѣплешь.	Хрома́ть, to be lame, хро́млю́ and хро́маю.
Щепа́ть, to chip, щеплю́, щѣплешь.	
Щипа́ть, to pinch, щиплю́, щи́плешь.	
Сы́пать, to strew, сы́плю, сы́плешь ( <i>imper.</i> сы́пь, instead of <i>сы́плъ</i> ).	



And also *имѣть*, to take, which now is used only with a preposition, as *принимѣть*, to receive, *pres. приѣмлю* and *принимаю*, and with other prepositions.

According to the 13th paradigm (*мѣчить*) are conjugated verbs in *имѣть* and *амѣть* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as one verb in *шѣть* (with the exception of the verbs in *амѣть*, which belong in the first conjugation). Such are:

Нѣжить, to nurse, <i>pres. нѣжу</i> , нѣ- жишь. [дружѣшь.	Сушить, to dry, <i>pres. сушѣу</i> , сушѣ- ишь.
Дружить, to make friends, дружѣу, Корчить, to shrivel, корчѣу, корчѣ- ишь.	Лежать, to lie, лежѣу, лежѣ- ишь.
Страшить, to frighten, страшѣу, стра- ишь.	Держать, to hold, держѣу, держѣ- ишь.
Вощить, to wax, вошѣу, вошѣ- ишь.	Кричать, to cry, кричѣу, кричѣ- ишь.
Лощить, to gloss, лошѣу, лошѣ- ишь.	Молчать, to be silent, молчѣу, молчѣ- ишь.
Служить, to serve, служѣу, служѣ- ишь.	Стучать, to knock, стучѣу, стучѣ- ишь.
Лечить, to cure, лечѣу, лечѣ- ишь.	Пышать, to burn, пышѣу, пышѣ- ишь.
Учить, to teach, учѣу, учѣ- ишь.	Дышать, to breathe, дышѣу, дышѣ- ишь.
	Пищать, to pipe, пишѣу, пишѣ- ишь.
	Трещать, to burst, трещѣу, трещѣ- ишь.
	Клещить, to swarm, кляшѣу, кляшѣ- ишь.

According to the 14th paradigm (*лѣдить*) are conjugated verbs in *дѣть* and *зѣть*, as well as the non-inchoatives *иѣть* *дѣть* (with the exception of *гудѣть*, *дудѣть*, *мерзѣть*, *тузѣть* and some others, which belong to the first branch of this second conjugation); these verbs change *ѣ* and *зѣ* into *ю* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *дѣть* have retained the Slavonian change of *ѣ* into *юдѣ* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вредѣть, to hurt, <i>pres. врежѣу</i> , вре- дѣишь.	Узѣть, to narrow, <i>pres. ужѣу</i> , узѣ- ишь.
Гладѣть, to even, глажѣу, гладѣ- ишь.	Морозѣть, to freeze, моробѣу, моробѣ- ишь.
Щадѣть, to spare, щадѣу, щадѣ- ишь.	Возѣть, to carry, вожѣу, возѣ- ишь.
Родѣть, to bring forth, рождѣу, родѣ- ишь.	Видѣть, to see, виждѣу, ( <i>impr.</i> видѣ and виждѣ).
Лудѣть, to tin, лужѣу, лудѣ- ишь.	Глядѣть, to look, гляжѣу, глядѣ- ишь.
Нудѣть, to compel, нужѣу, нудѣ- ишь.	Сидѣть, to sit, сижѣу, сидѣ- ишь.
Будѣть, to waken, бужѣу, будѣ- ишь.	Смердѣть, to stink, смержѣу, смер- дѣишь.
Водѣть, to lead, вожѣу, водѣ- ишь.	Убѣдѣть, to persuade, <i>fut.</i> убѣждѣу, убѣдѣишь.
Сердѣть, to anger, сержѣу, сердѣ- ишь.	Наградѣть, to reward, награждѣу, наградѣишь.
Судѣть, to judge, сужѣу, судѣ- ишь.	Возбудѣть, to excite, возбуждѣу, возбудѣишь. [упредѣишь.
Ходѣть, to go, хожѣу, ходѣ- ишь.	Упредѣть, to prevent, упреждѣу, упреждѣишь.
Грузѣть, to lade, грузѣу, грузѣ- ишь.	
Близѣть, to approach, ближѣу, бли- зѣишь.	
Грозѣть, to menace, грожу, грозѣишь.	
Низѣть, to lower, нѣжу, нѣишь.	

According to the 15th paradigm (вѣзѣть) are conjugated some verbs in *зѣть*, *гѣть* and *дѣть*, which change *з*, *г* and *д* into *ж* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed from this tense. These are:

Мѣзѣть, to anoint, *pres.* мѣжу, мѣжешь.

Рѣзѣть, to cut, рѣжу, рѣжешь.

Кѣзѣть, to show, кѣжу, кѣжешь.

Кѣзѣться, to seem, кѣжусь, кѣжешься.

Нѣзѣть, to thread, нѣжу, нѣжешь.

Лѣзѣть, to lick, лѣжу, лѣжешь.

Брызѣть, to splash, брызжу, брызжешь.

Глѣдѣть, to gnaw, *pres.* гложу́, глѣдешь.

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st br. of 1st. conjug.

Двѣгѣть, to move, двѣжу and двѣгаю.

Тягѣться, to be at law, тяжусь and тяжаюсь.

Стругѣть, to plane, стружу́ and строгаю (instead of *стругаю*).

According to the 16th paradigm (плѣтитъ) are conjugated verbs in *тѣть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *тѣть* (with the exception of some verbs in *тѣть* which belong to the 20th paradigm), which change *т* into *ч* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Винѣтитъ, to screw, *pres.* винчу́, винтитъ.

Золотѣтитъ, to gild, золочу́, золотитъ.

Забѣтитъ, to busy, забѣчу, забѣтитъ.

Порѣтитъ, to spoil, порѣчу, порѣтитъ.

Мутѣтитъ, to muddy, мучу́, мутитъ.

Круѣтитъ, to twist, кручу́, крутитъ.

Мѣтитъ, to aim, мѣчу, мѣтитъ.

Траѣтитъ, to spend, трачу, тратитъ.

Кѣтитъ, to roll, *pres.* качу́, кѣтитъ.

Молотѣтитъ, to thrash, молочу́, молотитъ.

Свѣтитъ, to light, свѣчу́, свѣтитъ.

Шутѣтитъ, to joke, шучу́, шутитъ.

Колѣтитъ, to knock, колочу́, колѣтитъ.

Верѣтитъ, to turn, верчу́, вертитъ.

Летѣтитъ, to fly, летчу́, летитъ.

Пыхѣтитъ, to puff, пыхчу́, пыхтитъ.

According to the 17th paradigm (плѣкѣть) are conjugated several verbs in *тѣть* and *кѣть*, which change *т* and *к* into *ч* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed from this tense. Such are.

Прѣтѣть, to hide, *pres.* прѣчу, прѣчешь [бормѣчешь.

Бормѣтѣть, to murmur, бормочу́, бормѣчешь.

Лепѣтѣть, to chatter, лепечу́, лепѣчешь.

Топѣтѣть, to tread town, топчу́, топчешь.

Хлопотѣть, to bustle, хлопочу́, хлопѣчешь.

Хохотѣть, to laugh aloud, хохочу́, хохѣчешь.

Шепѣтѣть, to whisper, шепчу́, шепчешь.

Щекѣтѣть, to tickle, щекочу́, кобѣчешь.

Кудѣхтѣть, to cackle, *pres.* кудѣхчу, кудѣхчешь.

Клѣкѣть, to call, клѣчу, клѣчешь.

Скакѣть, to leap, скачу́, скачешь.

Тѣкѣть, to thirst, тѣчу, тѣчешь.

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.

Алкѣть, to long, ѡлчу and ѡлкаю.

Икѣть, to hiccup, ичу́ and икаю.

Хнѣкѣть, to sob, хнѣчу and хнѣкаю.

Метѣть, to cast, мечу́ and метаю.

According to the 18th paradigm (просить) are conjugated verbs in *суть* (with the exception of *кудѣсуть* and *чудѣсуть* which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation), and also one non-inchoative in *сѣть*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вѣсѣть, to black, <i>pres.</i> вѣкшу, вѣкснѣ.	Трѣсѣть, to be afraid, <i>pres.</i> трѣшу, трѣснѣ.
Вѣсѣть, to weigh, вѣшу, вѣснѣ.	Росѣть, to bedew, рошѣ, роснѣ.
Квѣсѣть, to leaven, квѣшу, квѣснѣ.	Гасѣть, to put out, гашѣ, гаснѣ.
Красѣть, to colour, красшу, краснѣ.	Мѣсѣть, to knead, мѣшу, мѣснѣ.
Косѣть, to mow, кошѣ, коснѣ.	Носѣть, to bear, носшѣ, носнѣ.
Бѣсѣть, to madden, бѣшу, бѣснѣ.	Висѣть, to hang, вишѣ, виснѣ.

According to the 19th paradigm (писать) are conjugated some verbs in *сать* and *хать*, which 'change *с* and *х* into *ш* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плясѣть, to dance, <i>pres.</i> пляшѣ, пляшѣшѣ.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Поясѣть, to gird, пояшѣ, пояшѣшѣ.	Колыхѣть, to swing, <i>pres.</i> колѣшѣ, колыхѣшѣ.
Тесѣть, to hew, тешѣ, тѣшѣшѣ.	Махѣть, to fan, машѣ, машѣшѣ.
Чесѣть, to comb, чешѣ, чѣшѣшѣ.	
Брехѣть, to yell, брешѣ, брѣшѣшѣ.	
Пахѣть, to plough, пашѣ, пашѣшѣ.	

According to the 20th paradigm (чистить) are conjugated verbs in *суть* and the non-inchoatives in *сѣть*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *муть*, which have retained the Slavonian change of *т* into *ш*, belong also to this paradigm. Such are:

Грустѣть, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> грушѣ, грустѣшѣ.	Претѣть, to forbid, <i>pres.</i> прешѣ, претѣшѣ.
Гостѣть, to visit, гошѣ, гостѣшѣ.	Святѣть, to sanctify, свяшѣ, святѣшѣ.
Крестѣть, to christen, крешѣ, крѣстѣшѣ.	Сытѣть, to satiate, сышѣ, сытѣшѣ.
Мостѣть, to floor, мошѣ, мостѣшѣ.	Хитѣть, to ravish, хишѣ, хитѣшѣ.
Честѣть, to treat, чешѣ, честѣшѣ.	Посѣть, to visit, <i>fut.</i> посѣшѣ, посѣтѣшѣ.
Блестѣть, to shine, блешѣ, блестѣшѣ.	Укротѣть, to appease, укрошѣ, укротѣшѣ.
Свистѣть, to whistle, свишѣ, свистѣшѣ.	Сократѣть, to shorten, сокращѣ, сократѣшѣ.
Хрустѣть, to cranch, хрушѣ, -стѣшѣ.	Просвѣтѣть, to enlighten, просвѣшѣ, просвѣтѣшѣ.
Простѣть, to pardon, <i>fut.</i> прошѣ, простѣшѣ.	Возвратѣть, to return, возвращѣ, возвратѣшѣ.
Пустѣть, to let go, <i>fut.</i> пушѣ, пу- Богатѣть, to enrich, <i>pres.</i> богащѣ, бо- гатѣшѣ.	

The verbs *простѣть*, *пустѣть*, *посѣть* and following, are the perfect aspects of *прои́щать*, *пу́ска́ть*, *посѣ́щать*, *у́крои́щать*, *со́краща́ть*, *просѣ́щать*, *возвраща́ть*; thus the inflections *прошѹ́*, *пушѹ́*, *посѣшѹ́*, *у́кросѹ́*, &c., are future tenses.

According to the 21st paradigm (*иска́ть*) are conjugated some verbs in *ска́ть* and *ста́ть*, as well as four verbs in *та́ть*, which change *ск* and *ст*, or *т*, into *щ* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плеска́ть, to splash, <i>pres.</i> плещѹ́, плеще́шь.	Скрежета́ть, to gnash, <i>pres.</i> скрежещѹ́, скреже́шь.
Ры́ска́ть, to run, ры́шѹ́, ры́ще́шь.	Трепета́ть, to tremble, трепещѹ́, трепе́шь.
Поло́ска́ть, to rinse, поло́щѹ́, поло́ще́шь.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Сви́ста́ть, to whistle, сви́щѹ́, сви́ще́шь.	Блιστάть, shine, блещѹ́, бле́ще́шь and блиста́ю.
Хлеста́ть, to lash, хлещѹ́, хлеще́шь.	Пры́ска́ть, to sprinkle, пры́шѹ́ and пры́скаю.
Хвоста́ть, to brush, хвощѹ́, хвоще́шь.	
Клевета́ть, to slander, клеветѹ́, клевете́шь.	
Ропта́ть, to murmur, ропщѹ́, ропще́шь.	

Third conjugation.

According to the 22d paradigm (*тяну́ть*) are conjugated verbs in *нуть*, as well as four verbs in *ать* and one in *нть*, which have in the present *у*, observing that some of these verbs, accented on the last syllable in the first person of the present, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. The perfect aspect of unity belongs also to this paradigm, but the form *ну* of these verbs is a future tense. Such are:

Тону́ть, to sink, <i>pres.</i> тонѹ́, то́неше́ь.	Кину́ть, to cast, <i>fut.</i> кину́, кинеше́ь.
Ряну́ться, to be crazed, ряну́сь, ряну́сье́шь.	Верну́ть, to turn, верну́, верне́шь.
Жажда́ть, to desire, жажду́, жа́жде́шь.	Сви́снуть, to whistle, сви́сну, сви́снесе́ь.
Ора́ть, to cry, ору́, оре́шь.	Гряну́ть, to thunder, гряну́, гряне́шь.
Соса́ть, to suck, сосѹ́, сосе́шь.	Гляну́ть, to look, гляну́, глянеше́ь.
Стона́ть, to groan, стону́, стоне́шь.	Дви́нуть, to move, двину́, двине́шь.
Рева́ть, to roar, реву́, реве́шь.	Обману́ть, to cheat, обману́, обмане́шь.

The verb *стона́ть* belongs also to the first branch of the 1st conjugation, having in the present: *стону́*, *стоне́шь*, and *стона́ю*, *стона́е́шь*, &c. The verb *ора́ть*, in the sense of *to plough*, belongs to the first branch of the IIId conjugation.



According to the 23d and 24th paradigms (сѡхнѹть and вѣнѹть) are conjugated the inchoative verbs in *нѹть*, which in the preterit syncopate the termination *нѹлѡ* in *ѡ* if this termination is preceded by a consonant, and in *лѡ* if it is preceded by a vowel (neut. *лѡ*, fem. *ла*). Such are:

Блѣкнѹть, to fade, <i>pret.</i> блѣкѡ, клѡ, кла.	Пѡхнѹть, to smell, <i>pret.</i> пѡхѡ, хлѡ, хла.
Зѣбнѹть, to freeze, зѣбѡ, блѡ, бла.	Мѡкнѹть, to grow wet, мокѡ, клѡ, кла.
Кѣснѹть, to turn sour, кѣсѡ, слѡ, сла.	Вѣзнѹть, to sink in, вѣзѡ, злѡ, зла.
Мѣрзнѹть, to freeze, мѣрзѡ, злѡ, зла.	Гѡснѹть, to go out, гѡсѡ, слѡ, сла.
Гѣбнѹть, to perish, гѣбѡ, блѡ, бла.	Тѣхнѹть, to grow still, тѣхѡ, хлѡ, хла.
Дѡхнѹть, to die, дохѡ, хлѡ, хла.	Стѣнѹть, to cool, стѣлѡ, лѡ, ла.

And also the prepositional verb ушибѣть, *to confuse* (and with other prepositions, perfect aspect of *ушибѣать*), which has in the future ушибѣѹ, ушибѣѡшь, and in the preterit ушибѣ, ушиблѡ, ушибла, &c.

According to the 25th paradigm (мерѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ерѣть*, which have in the present *ру*, and which syncopate also the preterit, observing that *мерѣть* and *перѣть* transfer in the feminine gender of the preterit the accent to the last syllable. These are:

Мерѣть, to die, *pres.* мру, мрѣшь; *pret.* мѣрѡ, мерла, рлѡ; рли.

Перѣть, to press, — прѹ, прѣшь; — пѣрѡ, перла, рлѡ; рли.

And also the verb *стерѣть*, *pres.* стру, стрѣшь; *pret.* стѣрѡ, ла, рлѡ, which now is used only with a preposition, as: простѣрѣть, распростѣрѣть, *to extend*.

58.—The irregular verbs of the Russian language are divided into three classes: 1) the monosyllabic verbs in *мѡ* preceded by a vowel; 2) some dissyllabic verbs in *мѡ*, which in some inflections do not follow the general rules of the conjugation, and 3) the verbs with an irregular termination (in *змѡ*, *смѡ*, *чѡ*, *му* and *шу*), as is seen in the following table. Irregular verbs.

Among the monosyllabic verbs there are some which are regular and conjugated according to the paradigms of conjugations. These are:

(See page 142.)



# CONJUGATION OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

138

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR.

I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.		III. IMPERATIVE.		Passive participle.
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.	2. Iterative aspect.	1. Present (or Future). <i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>	2. Preterit. <i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	
Брить, to shave . . .	бравать . . .	брѣю, брѣ	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	бри́ть, йте .	бры́й, йте .	бры́тый.
Дуть, to blow . . .	дувать . . .	дую, ду	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	ду́ть, ѱа, .	ду́й, йте .	ду́тый.
Утъ (обуть), to put shoes . . .	уаать . . .	ую, у	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	уаъ, . . .	уа, йте .	уаый.
Пѣть, to sing . . .	пѣвать . . .	пою, по	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	пѣ́ть, ѱа, .	пой, йте .	пѣ́тый.
Вѣть, to howl . . .	— . . .	вою, во	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	вѣ́ть, ѱа, .	вой, йте .	—
Крыть, to cover . . .	кравать . . .	крою, кро	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	кравъ, . . .	крой, йте .	кравый.
Мыть, to wash . . .	мывать . . .	мою, мо	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	мы́ть, . . .	мой, йте .	мы́тый.
Ныть, to grieve . . .	нывать . . .	ною, но	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	ны́ть, . . .	пой, йте .	—
Рыть, to dig . . .	рывать . . .	рою, ро	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	ры́ть, . . .	рой, йте .	ры́тый.
Гнить, to putrefy . . .	гнивать . . .	гнию, гни	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	гни́ть, ѱа, .	гни́й, йте .	—
Бить, to beat . . .	бивать . . .	бую, бь	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	бывъ, . . .	бей, йте .	быйтый.
Шить, to sew . . .	шивать . . .	шью, шь	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	шивъ, . . .	шей, йте .	шитый.
Вить, to twine . . .	вивать . . .	вою, вь	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	вивъ, ѱа, .	вей, йте .	витый.
Лить, to pour . . .	ливать . . .	лью, ль	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	ливъ, . . .	лей, йте .	литой.
Пить, to drink . . .	пивать . . .	пью, пь	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	пивъ, . . .	пей, йте .	питый.
Чить (почить), to repose . . .	— . . .	чую, чи	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	чивъ, . . .	чй, йте .	—
Жить, to live . . .	живать . . .	живу, жив	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	живъ, . . .	живй, йте .	(въ) житый.
Плыть, to navigate . . .	плывать . . .	плыву, плыв	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	плывъ, ѱа, .	плывй, йте .	—
Слыть, to be reputed . . .	слывать . . .	слыву, слыв	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	слывъ, . . .	слывй, йте .	—
Стыть, to grow cold . . .	стывать . . .	стыну, стын	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	стывъ, ѱа, .	стынь, йте .	—
Здаты, to build . . .	здавать . . .	здаю, зда	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	здавъ, ѱа, .	имй, йте .	ятый.
Ять (взять), to take . . .	— . . .	иму, им	ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ	здавъ, ѱа, .	зйжид, йте .	здатый.

## I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.

Возбуж

Брать, to take . . .	бирать	беру́, бер	бравъ, . . .	берѣ, ѣте	бранный.
Драть, to tear . . .	дирать	деру́, дер	дралъ, . . .	дерѣ, ѣте	дранный
Звать, to call . . .	зывать	зову́, зов	звалъ, . . .	зовѣ, ѣте	званный.
Врать, to babble . . .	вырять	вру́, вр	вралъ, . . .	врѣ, ѣте	—
Жрать, to devour . . .	жирать	жру́, жр	жралъ, . . .	жрѣ, ѣте	(по) жранный.
Ждать, to await . . .	жидать	жду́, жд	ждалъ, . . .	ждѣ, ѣте	жданый.
Рвать, to pluck . . .	рывать	рву́, рв	рвалъ, . . .	рвѣ, ѣте	рванный.
Ржать, to neigh . . .	—	ржу́, рж	ржалъ, . . .	ржѣ, ѣте	—
Жмать, to press . . .	жимать	жму́, жм	жалъ, . . .	жмѣ, ѣте	жатый.
Жмать, to mow . . .	жидать	жну́, жн	жалъ, . . .	жнѣ, ѣте	жатый.
Мять, to knead . . .	минать	мну́, мн	мялъ, . . .	мнѣ, ѣте	мятый.
Прать (попирать), to trample	пирать	пру́, пр	пралъ, . . .	прѣ, ѣте	праный.
Пять (распирать), to stretch	пикать	пкѣ́, пк	пкѣлъ, . . .	пкѣ, ѣте	пиктый.
Чать (начать), to begin . . .	чинать	чу́, чн	чалъ, . . .	чнѣ, ѣте	чатый.
Слатъ, to send . . .	сылать	шлю́, . . .	слагъ, . . .	шлѣ, ѣте	сланный.
Слатъ, to spread . . .	ссылать	стѣлю́, стѣн	стлалъ, . . .	стѣлѣ, ѣте	стланный.
Стать, <i>perf. asp.</i> to become	—	стѣ́, стѣн	сталъ, . . .	станѣ, ѣте	—
Дать, <i>perf. asp.</i> to put . . .	—	дѣ́, дѣн	дѣлъ, . . .	дѣнѣ, ѣте	дѣтый.
Дать, <i>perf. asp.</i> to give . . .	—	дѣ́, дѣн	далъ, . . .	даѣ, ѣте	данный.
Лгать, to tell lies . . .	лыгать	лгу́, лж	лгалъ, . . .	лгѣ, ѣте	(въ) лганный.
Ткать, to weave . . .	тыкать	тку́, тк	ткѣлъ, . . .	ткѣ, ѣте	тканый.
Скатъ, to twist . . .	—	ску́, сч	скалъ, . . .	скѣ, ѣте	сканный.
Гнать, to drive . . .	—	гоню́, . . .	гналъ, . . .	гонѣ, ѣте	гнанный.
Спать, to sleep . . .	сыпать	спѣ́, сп	спалъ, . . .	спѣ, ѣте	(за) спанный.
Чтить, to honour . . .	чигать	чу́, чг	чталъ, . . .	чтѣ, ѣте	чтѣнный.
Быть, <i>perf. asp.</i> to be . . .	—	бѣ́, бѣн	былъ, . . .	будѣ, ѣте	(за) бятый.

## 2. DISSYLLABIC VERBS.

Б'хать, to ride . . .	—	бѣ́, бѣн	бѣхалъ, . . .	(по)бзжай, ѣте	—
Б'жать, to run . . .	—	бѣ́, бѣн	бѣжалъ, . . .	бѣгѣ, ѣте	—
Хотѣть, to will . . .	—	хочу́, . . .	хотѣлъ, . . .	хотѣ, ѣте	—

I. INFINITIVE.			II. INDICATIVE.			III. IMPERATIVE.		
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.		2. Iterative aspect.	1. PRESENT (or FUTURE).		2. PRETERIT.	2d pers.	Passive participle.	
Singular.			Plural.					Sing.
3. VERBS WITH AN IRREGULAR TERMINATION.								
Везѣти, to carry . . .	— . . .	везу́, везѣ́ть	ёшь, ётъ; ёмъ, ёте	— . . .	вёзъ, зѣ́лъ, лѣ́	вези́, ите .	везённый.	
Ползѣти, to crawl . . .	ползѣ́ть . . .	ползу́, ползѣ́ть	— . . .	— . . .	ползѣ́, — . . .	ползи́, ите .	—	
Лѣзѣти, to gnaw . . .	лѣзѣ́ть . . .	лѣзу́, лѣзѣ́ть	— . . .	— . . .	лѣзѣ́, лѣ́ла, ло; ли	лѣзи́, ите .	лѣзённый.	
Вѣрѣти (отверзѣти), to open . . .	верѣ́тъ . . .	вѣрзу́, верѣ́тъ	ёшь, етъ; емъ, ете	— . . .	вѣрзѣ́, — . . .	вѣрзи́, ите .	вѣрзённый.	
Нести, to bring . . .	— . . .	несу́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	несѣ́, сѣ́лъ, лѣ́	неси́, ите .	несённый.	
Пастѣти, to pasture . . .	пастѣ́ть . . .	пасу́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	пасѣ́, — . . .	паси́, ите .	пасённый.	
Трясѣти, to shake . . .	трясѣ́ть . . .	трясу́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	трясѣ́, — . . .	тряси́, ите .	трясённый.	
Грести́ or Гребѣти, to row . . .	гребѣ́ть . . .	гребу́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	гребѣ́, бѣ́лъ, — . . .	гребѣ́, ите .	гребённый.	
Скребѣти, to scrape . . .	скребѣ́ть . . .	скребу́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	скребѣ́, — . . .	скреби́, ите .	скребённый.	
Бодѣти, to butt . . .	бодѣ́ть . . .	боду́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	— . . .	боди́, ите .	—	
Блюсти́, to keep . . .	блюсти́ть . . .	блюду́, — . . .	ёшь, ётъ; ёмъ, ёте	— . . .	блюмъ, мѣ́, лѣ́	блюди́, ите .	блюдённый.	
Брести́, to ramble . . .	— . . .	брѣду́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	брѣмъ, — . . .	брѣди́, ите .	—	
Вести́, to lead . <i>Водѣти</i> . . .	— . . .	веду́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	вѣмъ, — . . .	веди́, ите .	ведённый.	
Класть, to lay . . .	кла́дывать . . .	кладу́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	кльмъ, я́ла, ло; ли	клади́, ите .	кладённый.	
Пастѣ́, <i>perf. asp.</i> to fall . . .	— . . .	паду́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	намъ, мѣ́, — . . .	пади́, ите .	—	
Прясти́, to spin . . .	прядѣ́ть . . .	пряду́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	прямъ, я́ла, ло; ли	пряди́, ите .	прядённый.	
Грядѣти, to go . . .	— . . .	гряду́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	— . . .	гряди́, ите .	—	
Красть, to steal . . .	кра́дывать . . .	краду́, — . . .	ёшь, етъ; емъ, ете	— . . .	краль, мѣ́ла, ло; ли	крадь, ѣте .	крадённый.	
Сѣсть, <i>perf. asp.</i> to sit . . .	— . . .	сѣду́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	сѣмъ, мѣ́ла, — . . .	сѣдь, ѣте .	—	
Мѣсти́, to perturb . . .	мѣтѣ́ть . . .	мѣту́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	мѣмъ, мѣ́, лѣ́	мѣти́, ите .	мѣтённый.	
Мѣсти́, to sweep . . .	метѣ́ть . . .	мету́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	мѣмъ, мѣ́, лѣ́	мети́, ите .	метённый.	
Гнетѣти, to press . . .	гнетѣ́ть . . .	гнету́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	гнемъ, — . . .	гнети́, ите .	гнетённый.	
Плестѣти, to plait . . .	плетѣ́ть . . .	плету́, — . . .	ёшь, ётъ; ёмъ, ёте	— . . .	плѣмъ, — . . .	плети́, ите .	плетённый.	
Цвѣсти́, to flower . . .	цвѣтѣ́ть . . .	цвѣту́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	цвѣмъ, — . . .	цвѣти́, ите .	—	
Рыскѣти (обрыскѣти), to find out . . .	рыска́ть . . .	рыска́ю, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	рыскъ, — . . .	рыски́, ите .	рыскённый.	
Чѣсть (счесть), to count . . .	читѣ́ть . . .	читу́, — . . .	— . . .	— . . .	чѣмъ, чѣ́лъ, чѣ́ло, чѣ́ли	чти́, ите .	читённый.	





Знать, to know, I. 1, <i>pres.</i> знаю, знаёшь.	Тмѣть, to darken, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> тмю.
Пхать, to push, — пхаю.	Бдѣть, to wake, — бдю.
Чкать, to clash, — чкаю.	Зрѣть, to see, — зрю.
Грѣть, to warm, I. 4, <i>pres.</i> грѣю.	Мжить, to twinkle, II. 3, <i>pres.</i> мжу, мжншь.
Зрѣть, to ripen, — зрѣю.	Мшить, to cover with moss, — мшу.
Млѣть, to be stupified, — млѣю.	Тщѣться, to endeavour, — тщуся.
Прѣть, to stew, — прѣю.	Мчать, to hurry, — мчу.
Рдѣть, to redden, — рдѣю.	Пзѣть (пронзѣть), to pierce, II. 4, <i>pres.</i> -вжу, взншь.
Смѣть, to dare, — смѣю.	Льстѣть, to flatter, II. 7, <i>pres.</i> льщу, льстншь.
Спѣть, to ripen, — спѣю.	Мстѣть, to avenge, — мщу, мстншь.
Тлѣть, to rot, — тлѣю.	Гнуть, to bend, III. 1, <i>pres.</i> гну, гнѣшь.
Длѣть, to prolong, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> длю, длншь.	Лгнушь, to stick, — лгну.
Дмѣть, to swell, — дмю.	Мзгнуть, to turn sour, — мзгну.
Злѣть, to irritate, — злѣю.	Мкнуть, to shut, — мкну.
Мнѣть, to think, — мню.	Снуть, to fall asleep, — спну.
Снѣться, to dream, <i>impers.</i> снѣтся.	
Тлѣть, to corrupt, — тлѣю, тлншь.	

The preceding table of irregular verbs gives also the *iterative aspect* and the *passive participle*, inflections which in these verbs do not follow always the general rules of the formation.

Delineation  
of verbs.

59.—The property of the Russian verbs to have more or less aspects, is named their *delineation* (начертáнiе), and depends as well upon their exterior form as upon their meaning. With this relation the verbs, as is above mentioned (§ 50), are *simple* (просты́е) or *prepositional* (предложные).

1. The *simple* verbs, which are without a preposition, can be *complete* (полные), *double* (сугубые), *incomplete* (неполные) and *defective* (недостаточные). The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate a physical action of men or animals, as кидать, *to throw*; плевать, *to spit*. The *double* simple verbs are those which express the movement of an acting object, as идти and ходить, *to go*; нести and носить, *to bring*. The *incomplete* and *defective* simple verbs are those which are not included in



the two preceding subdivisions, as *дѣлать*, *to make*; *имѣть*, *to have*.

2. The *prepositional* verbs, which are formed with any preposition, are subdivided, relatively to their delineation, according as they are derivated from the incomplete, defective, complete or double simple verbs.—In general the delineation of the Russian verbs, as well simple as prepositional, is seen in the following table.

#### DELINEATION OF VERBS.

##### I. SIMPLE VERBS.

1. The *incomplete* simple verbs have 2 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *iterative*.

*дѣлать*.

*дѣлывать*.

3. The *defective* simple verbs have only the *imperfect* aspect.

*имѣть*.

3. The *complete* simple verbs have the 3 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *iterative*. 3) *perf. of unity*.

*кидѣть*.

*кидывать*.

*кинуть*.

4. The *double* simple verbs are two verbs which have together 3 aspects:

1) *definite imp.* 2) *indef. imp.* 3) *iterative*.

*нести*.

*носить*.

*нашивать*.

##### II. PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.

1. Formed from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have 2 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *perfect of duration*.

*обдѣлывать*.

*обдѣлать*.

2. Formed from the *defective* simple verbs, they have only the aspect *perfect of duration*.

*возьимѣть*.

3. Formed from the *complete* simple verbs, they have the 3 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *perf. of durat.* 3) *perf. of unity*.

*закидывать*.

*закидѣть*.

*закинуть*.

4. Formed from the *double* simple verbs, there are two various verbs, each with 2 aspects: a) from the *definite* verb. b) from the *indefinite* verb.

1) *imperf.* 2) *perfect.* 1) *imperf.* 2) *perfect.*

*выносить*.

*вынести*.

*вынашивать*.

*выносить*.

60.—The *incomplete* simple verbs are those which Simple verbs. do not designate a physical action properly so called, neither a movement of a place to another. These verbs have two aspects: 1) the *imperfect* aspect, and 2) the *iterative* aspect. The first, which is the radical form of the verb, ends in *тъ*, *чь*, *ти* or *шу*, and the latter in *ывать*, *ивать*, *вать* or

*амь*, and is formed from the imperfect aspect, as is seen in the following examples.

In the formation of the iterative aspect the tonic accent is placed on the termination *амь* and *амь*, whilst in *ывамь* and *ивамь* it is placed on the antepenultima, and if in this syllable is an *o*, this vowel is changed into *á*. We must yet observe that the iterative aspect is seldom used in the infinitive, and it has in general only the preterit tense; e. g. *не пивáмь тебѣ винá, you ought not to drink wine; онъ пѣзѣсáлъ верхóмъ, he rid often*; but this inflection is necessary to form the prepositional verbs. The table of irregular verbs, above shown (§ 58), gives also the iterative aspect, which in these verbs presents some irregularities.

1) Imperfect aspect.	2) Iterative asp.
Гадáть, to guess, I. 1. . . . .	га́дывать.
Думáть, to think, — . . . . .	ду́мывать.
Дѣлáть, to make, — . . . . .	дѣ́лывать.
Игрáть, to play, — . . . . .	иѓрывать.
Кутáть, to wrap, — . . . . .	ку́тывать.
Мотáть, to wind, — . . . . .	ма́тывать.
Работáть, to work, — . . . . .	раба́тывать.
Щупáть, to sound, — . . . . .	щуп́ывать.
Знáть, to know, — . . . . .	знаба́ть.
Ковáть, to forge, I. 2. . . . .	ко́вывать.
Рисовáть, to draw, — . . . . .	рисо́вывать.
Совѣтовáть, to counsel, — . . . . .	совѣ́тывать.
Воевáть, to war, — . . . . .	воё́вывать.
Дневáть, to pass the day, — . . . . .	днё́вывать.
Ночевáть, to pass the night, — . . . . .	ночё́вывать.
Гуля́ть, to take a walk, I. 3. . . . .	гу́ливать.
Равня́ть, to equal, — . . . . .	равни́вать.
Смѣ́яться, to laugh, — . . . . .	смѣ́иваться.
Вѣ́ять, to blow, — . . . . .	вѣ́вать.
Сѣ́ять, to sow, — . . . . .	сѣ́вать.
Слабѣ́ть, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	слабѣ́вать.
Грѣ́ть, to warm, — . . . . .	грѣ́вать.
Говѣ́ть, to keep fast, — . . . . .	гави́вать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Брани́ть, to scold, II, 1. . . . .	бра́нивать.
Пали́ть, to fire, — . . . . .	па́ливать.
Моли́ть, to pray, — . . . . .	ма́ливать.
Спо́рить, to contend, — . . . . .	спа́ривать.
Дари́ть, to give, — . . . . .	да́ривать.
Дразни́ть, to provoke, — . . . . .	дра́жнить.
Боле́ть, to ache, — . . . . .	ба́ливать.
Смотре́ть, to look, — . . . . .	сма́тривать.
Горе́ть, to burn, — . . . . .	гара́ть.
Веле́ть, to order, — . . . . .	велѣ́вать.
Зре́ть, to see, — . . . . .	зира́ть.
Пой́ть, to give to drink, . . . . .	па́ивать.
Клеи́ть, to glue, — . . . . .	кле́ивать.
Боя́ться, to fear, — . . . . .	ба́иваться.
Поро́ть, to rip, — . . . . .	па́рывать.
Моло́ть, to grind, — . . . . .	ма́лыивать.
Люби́ть, to love, II. 2. . . . .	лю́блывать.
Лови́ть, to catch, — . . . . .	ла́вливать.
Руби́ть, to hew, — . . . . .	руба́ть.
Корми́ть, to nourish, — . . . . .	ка́рмливать.
Топи́ть, to heat, — . . . . .	та́пливать.
Терпи́ть, to suffer, — . . . . .	те́рпливать.
Кипе́ть, to boil, — . . . . .	кипа́ть.
Дрема́ть, to slumber, — . . . . .	дре́мливать.
Сыпа́ть, to strew, — . . . . .	сыпа́ть.
Хрома́ть, to be lame, — . . . . .	хра́мывать.
Лечи́ть, to cure, II. 3. . . . .	ле́чивать.
Служи́ть, to serve, — . . . . .	слу́живать.
Туши́ть, to put out, — . . . . .	ту́шить.
Морщи́ть, to wrinkle, — . . . . .	ма́рщивать.
Держа́ть, to keep, — . . . . .	де́рживать.
Молча́ть, to be silent, — . . . . .	ма́лчивать.
Дыша́ть, to breathe, — . . . . .	дыха́ть.
Глади́ть, to even, II. 4. . . . .	гле́живать.
Городи́ть, to enclose, — . . . . .	гора́живать.
Суди́ть, to judge, — . . . . .	су́живать.
Грузи́ть, to lade, — . . . . .	гру́живать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Сидѣть, to sit, II. 4. . . . .	сиживать.
Вязать, to tie, — . . . . .	вязывать.
Платить, to pay, II. 5. . . . .	плачивать.
Кодотить, to knock, — . . . . .	колачивать.
Молотить, to thrash, — . . . . .	молачивать.
Плакать, to weep, — . . . . .	плакивать.
Вѣсить, to weigh, II. 6. . . . .	вѣшивать.
Просить, to ask, — . . . . .	прашивать.
Гасить, to extinguish, — . . . . .	гашивать.
Писать, to write, — . . . . .	писывать.
Плясать, to dance, — . . . . .	плясывать.
Пахать, to plough, — . . . . .	пахивать.
Гостить, to visit, II. 7. . . . .	гашивать.
Мостить, to floor, — . . . . .	мащивать.
Снастить, to rig, — . . . . .	снашивать.
Искать, to seek, — . . . . .	искивать.
Топнуть, to sink, III. 1. . . . .	топать.
Тянуть, to draw, — . . . . .	тягивать.
Вянуть, to fade, — . . . . .	вядать.
Сохнуть, to dry, — . . . . .	сыхать.
Пахнуть, to smell, — . . . . .	пахивать.
Гнуть, to bend, — . . . . .	гибать.
Мкнуть, to shut, — . . . . .	мыкать.
Сосать, to suck, — . . . . .	сасывать.
Переть, to press, III. 2. . . . .	пирать.
Тереть, to rub, — . . . . .	тирать.

61.—The *defective* simple verbs are those which have only the *indefinite imperfect* aspect, such are the following verbs:

Адѣть, to grow ruby. I. 4.	Желать, to wish, I. 1.
Бѣдствовать, to be in misery, I. 2.	Имѣть, to have, I. 4.
Винить, to accuse, II. 1.	Карать, to punish, I. 1.
Владѣть, to govern, I. 4.	Лстить, to flatter, II. 7.
Вредить, to hurt, II. 4.	Мечтать, to imagine, I. 1.
Гордиться, to be proud, II. 4.	Мирить, to pacify, II. 1.
Жалѣть, to have pity, I. 4.	Мудрить, to subtilize, II. 1.

Мягчить, to mollify, II. 3.	Творить, to create, II. 1.
Пóддннчать, to lunch, I. 1.	Терять, to lose, I. 3.
Радѣть, to take care, I. 4.	Торопить, to hurry, II. 2.
Растить, to let grow, II. 7.	Умничать, to refine, I. 1.
Роптáть, to murmur, II. 7.	Умѣть, to know, I. 4.
Рыдáть, to sob, I. 1.	Хитрить, to be artful, II. 1.
Святить, to sanctify, II. 7.	Хранить, to preserve, II. 1.
Спѣшнѣть, to hasten, II. 3.	Хотѣть, to will, <i>irr.</i>
Старáться, to endeavour, I. 1.	Щадить, to spare, II. 4.

The defective verbs differ from the incomplete verbs in as much as they have not the iterative aspect, which in general is used only in verbs designating an ordinary, non intellectual action, and it is not found in poetry neither in an elevated style.

62.—The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate ordinarily a physical action of men or animals, or, speaking more correctly, a visible or audible action. These verbs have the three aspects: 1) the *imperfect*, 2) the *iterative*, and 3) the *perfect of unity*. The two first aspects have all the properties of those of incomplete verbs; but the perfect aspect of unity ends in *нѣть*, and is formed putting this termination in the place of that of the imperfect aspect, sometimes with a little change of the vowel, and sometimes with the elision of the preceding consonant, as is seen in the following examples.

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Iterative aspect.</i>	3) <i>Perf. asp. of unity.</i>
А'хать, to sigh, I. 1. . .	áхивать. . . . .	áхнѣть, III. 1.
Блнстáть, to shine, — . . .	— . . . . .	блнснѣть, —
Болтáть, to shake, — . . .	бáлтывать. . . . .	болтнѣть, —
Глотáть, to swallow, — . . .	глáтывать. . . . .	глонѣть, —
Двнгатъ, to move, I. 1. and II. 4. . . . .	двнгнвать and двнгатъ. . . . .	двннѣть, —
Дерзáть, to dare, I. 1. . .	— . . . . .	дерзнѣть, —



1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative aspect.*3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Зѣвѣть, to yawn, I. 1.	Зѣвывать. . . . .	зѣвнѣть, III, 1.
Касѣться, to touch, — .	— . . . . .	коснѣться, —
Квѣкать, to quack, — .	квѣкивать. . . . .	квѣкнуть, —
Кивѣть, to give a nod, —	— . . . . .	кивнѣть, —
Кидѣть, to cast, — . .	кидывать. . . . .	кинѣть, —
Лопѣть, to burst, — . .	лопывать. . . . .	лопнѣть, —
Нюхѣть, to smell, — . .	нюхивать. . . . .	нюхнѣть, —
Порхѣть, to flutter, — .	пѣрхивать. . . . .	порхнѣть, —
Прыгѣть, to jump, — .	прыгивать. . . . .	прыгнѣть, —
Прѣдѣть, to bound, — .	прѣдывать. . . . .	прѣянуть, —
Сверкѣть, to flash, — .	свѣркивать. . . . .	сверкнѣть, —
Толкѣть, to push, — . .	талкивать. . . . .	толкнѣть, —
Трогѣть, to touch, — .	трѣгивать. . . . .	трѣонѣть, —
Хѣркать, to spit, — . .	хѣркивать. . . . .	хѣркнѣть, —
Хлопѣть, to clap, — . .	хлопывать. . . . .	хлопнѣть, —
Совѣть, to shove, I. 2.	совывать . . . . .	сѣянуть, —
Клевѣть, to peck, — . .	клѣвывать. . . . .	клѣонѣть, —
Плевѣть, to spit, — . .	плѣвывать. . . . .	плѣонѣть, —
Жевѣть, to chew, — . .	жѣвывать. . . . .	жевнѣть, —
Кашлять, to cough, I. 3.	кашливать. . . . .	кашлянѣть, —
Нырѣть, to dive, — . .	ныривать. . . . .	нырнѣть, —
Стрѣлять, to shoot, — .	стрѣливать . . . . .	стрѣльнѣть, —
Швырѣть, to sling, — .	швыривать. . . . .	швырнѣть, —
Рѣять, to throw, — . .	— . . . . .	рѣянуть, —
Скользѣть, to slip, II. 1.	скѣльзывать. . . . .	скользнѣть, —
Шевелѣть, to stir, — . .	шевелѣвать. . . . .	шевелѣнѣть, —
Колѣть, to sting, — . .	калывать. . . . .	кольнѣть, —
Давѣть, to press, II. 2.	давливать. . . . .	давнѣть, —
Рубѣть, to hew, — . . .	рубѣть. . . . .	рубнѣть, —
Гремѣть, to thunder, — .	— . . . . .	грѣянуть, —
Храпѣть, to snore, — .	хрѣпывать. . . . .	храпнѣть, —
Трепѣть, to brake, — .	трѣпливать. . . . .	трепнѣть, —
Щипѣть, to pinch, — .	щипывать. . . . .	щипнѣть, —
Ворошить, to rummage, II. 3.	ворѣшивать. . . . .	ворохнѣть, —
Плющѣть, to flatten, — .	плѣщивать. . . . .	плѣснуть, —
Визжѣть, to squeak, — .	вѣзгивать. . . . .	вѣзгнѣть, —
Дрожѣть, to tremble, —	дрѣгивать. . . . .	дрѣгнѣть, —

1) *imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative aspect.*3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Крича́ть, to cry, II. 3.	кри́кивать. . . . .	кри́кнуть, III. 1.
Пыша́ть, to burn, — . . .	пы́хивать. . . . .	пы́хнуть, —
Треща́ть, to burst, — . . .	тре́скивать. . . . .	тре́снуть, —
Глядѣ́ть, to look, II. 4.	гля́дывать. . . . .	гля́нуть, —
Брызга́ть, to splash, — . . .	брызгивать. . . . .	брызну́ть, —
Лиза́ть, to lick, — . . .	ли́зывать. . . . .	ли́зну́ть, —
Маза́ть, to anoint, — . . .	ма́зывать. . . . .	ма́зну́ть, —
Верте́ть, to turn, II. 5.	вѣ́ртывать or вѣ́рчивать.	верну́ть, —
Скака́ть, to leap, — . . .	ска́кивать. . . . .	скокну́ть, —
Клика́ть, to call, — . . .	кли́кать. . . . .	кли́кнуть, —
Шепта́ть, to whisper, — . . .	ше́птывать. . . . .	ше́пну́ть, —
Труси́ть, to sprinkle, II. 6.	— . . . . .	тру́хну́ть, —
Колыха́ть, to swing, — . . .	колы́хивать. . . . .	колы́хну́ть, —
Маха́ть, to wave, — . . .	ма́хивать. . . . .	ма́хну́ть, —
Плеска́ть, to splash, II. 7.	плéскивать. . . . .	плесну́ть, —
Прыска́ть, to syringe, — . . .	пры́скивать. . . . .	пры́сну́ть, —
Свиста́ть, to whistle, — . . .	сви́стывать. . . . .	сви́сну́ть, —
Хлеста́ть, to lash, — . . .	хлё́стывать. . . . .	хлесну́ть, —
Грести́, to scrape, <i>irr.</i>	гребáть. . . . .	гребну́ть, —
Ду́ть, to blow, — . . .	дува́ть. . . . .	ду́ну́ть, —
Жечь, to burn, — . . .	жигáть, . . . . .	жигну́ть, —
Рва́ть, to tear, — . . .	рыва́ть. . . . .	рвану́ть, —
Стри́чь, to shear, . . .	стрига́ть. . . . .	стригну́ть, —
Траста́ть, to skake, — . . .	тряса́ть. . . . .	тряхну́ть, —

Some verbs, as *мину́ть, обману́ть, помяну́ть, вы́нуть*, which are perfect aspects of *миновáть, to pass; обмáнывать, to cheat; поминáть, to mention; вы́нимáть, to take out*, have the termination of the perfect aspect of unity; but by their meaning they do not designate an action performed only once. In these verbs the letter *н* belongs to the root, and not to the termination.

63.—The *double* simple verbs are those which designate the movement of an acting object, or sometimes a visible or audible action. These verbs have together three aspects: 1) the *definite imperfect*, 2) the *indefinite imperfect*, and 3) the *iterative*.

aspect. The definite aspect is the radical form, from which are derived both the others. These are the following verbs:

- 1) *Definite imperfect aspect.*    2) *Indefinite imp. aspect.*    3) *Iterative aspect.*

Блудить, to ramble, II. 4.	блуждать, I. 1.	—
Брестить, to wander, <i>irr.</i>	бродить, II. 4.	браживать.
Бѣжать, to run, <i>irr.</i>	бѣгать, I. 1.	бѣгивать and бѣгать.
Валить, to throw down, II. 1.	валить, I. 3.	валивать.
Везти, to carry, <i>irr.</i>	возить, II. 4.	важивать.
Вести, to lead, <i>irr.</i>	водить, —	важивать.
Видѣть, to see, II. 4.	видать, I. 1.	видывать.
Гнать, to drive, <i>irr.</i>	гонять, I. 3.	ганивать.
Идти, to go, <i>irr.</i>	ходить, II. 4.	хаживать.
Катить, to roll, II. 5.	качать, I. 1.	качивать.
Кривить, to crook, II. 2.	кривлять, I. 3.	кривлявать.
Летѣть, to fly, II. 5.	летать, I. 1.	лѣтывать.
Ломить, to break, II. 2.	ломать, —	ламывать.
Лѣзть, to climb, <i>irr.</i>	лазить, II. 4.	лѣзать and лаживать.
Нести, to bring, <i>irr.</i>	носить, II. 6.	нашивать.
Плыть, to swim, <i>irr.</i>	плавать, I. 1.	плывать.
Ползти, to crawl, <i>irr.</i>	ползать, —	ползать and палзывать.
Ронить, to let fall, II. 1.	ронять, I. 3.	ранивать.
Слышать, to hear, II. 3.	слыхать, I. 1.	слыхивать.
Садить, to seat, II. 4.	сажать, —	саживать.
Тащить, to trail, II. 3.	таскать, —	таскивать.
Ѣхать, to ride, <i>irr.</i>	ѣздить, II. 4.	ѣживать and ѣзжать.

The Russian language has some verbs which, with a double termination, do not designate a movement; such are: блистать and блестять, *to shine*; мѣрить and мѣрять, *to measure*; свистать and свистѣть, *to whistle*. These verbs do not belong to the class of the double verbs; they are two various forms which have the same meaning, and which do not express the definite or indefinite nature of the action.

Prepositional verbs.

64.—The prepositional verbs are formed from the simple verbs by means of any preposition. The prepositions, when they are joined to a verb, sub-

ject it to sundry changes either in the voice, in the aspect and time, or in the meaning:

1. A neuter verb sometimes takes with the preposition the active meaning, as: спать, *to sleep*, and проспáть, *to pass in sleeping*; быть, *to be*, and забыть, *to forget*; пла́кать, *to weep*, and вы́плакать, *to obtain by weeping*.

2. The influence of a preposition on the time and aspect is more important than that on the voice. A simple verb, taking a preposition, receives a more restricted meaning. Thus, by joining to a preposition, the iterative aspect becomes imperfect, and the imperfect aspect becomes perfect. But this latter remains a perfect aspect even with a preposition, as is seen by the two following examples.

Simple figure.	Prepositional figure.
Дв́инуть, to move, } <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i> Бро́сить, to throw, }	Вд́винуть, to move in, } <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i> Набро́сить, to throw on, }
Дв́игать, } <i>imperfect aspect . . . . .</i> бросáть, }	Вд́вигать, } <i>perf. asp. of duration.</i> набросáть, }
Дв́игать or дв́игивать, } <i>iterative asp.</i> бросáывать, . . . . . }	Вд́вигать or вд́вигивать, } <i>imperfect asp.</i> набросáывать, . . . . . }

3. The acceptation of the verb, independently of the completion of the action, is modified by the meaning of the preposition, as is seen in the two following examples: ход́ить or ид́ти, *to go*, and имáть or ять, *to take*.

Вход́ить, войт́и, to go in.	Нисход́ить, низойт́и, to go down.
Восход́ить, взойт́и, to go up.	Обход́ить, обойт́и, to go round.
Выход́ить, выйт́и, to go out.	Отход́ить, отойт́и, to go away.
Доход́ить, дойт́и, to come to.	Переход́ить, перейт́и, to go over.
Заход́ить, зайт́и, to go behind.	
Исход́ить, изойт́и, to go out.	Превосход́ить, превзойт́и, to surpass.
Наход́ить, найт́и, to go upon.	



Походить, to resemble.	Донимать, донять, to get the remainder.
Пойти, to go.	
Подходить, подойти, to go under.	Занимать, занять, to borrow.
Предходить, to go before.	Изнимать, изнять, to take out.
Приходить, прийти, to come in.	Нанимать, нанять, to hire.
Проходить, пройти, to go through.	Обнимать, обнять, to embrace.
Присходить, произойти, to proceed.	Отнимать, отнять, to take away.
Расходиться, разойтись, to go asunder.	Перенимать, перенять, to intercept. [stand.
Сходить, сойти, to go down.	Понимать, понять, to understand.
Снисходить, снизойти, to condescend.	Поймать, to catch.
Уходить, уйти, to go away.	Поднимать, поднять, to take up.
Внимать, внять, to attend to.	Предпринимать, предпринять, to undertake.
Взимать, to levy.	Принимать, принять, to accept.
Взять, to take.	Приподнимать, приподнять, to raise up.
Воздымать, to raise.	Пронимать, пронять, to put through.
Воспринимать, воспринять, to receive.	Разнимать, разнять, to take asunder.
Вынимать, вынуть, to take out.	Снимать, снять, to take off.
	Унимать, унять, to repress.

The two preceding examples show that the prepositions which are joined to verbs, are: в (во), вз (взо, воз), вы, до, за, из (изо), на, над (надо), низ (низо), о or об (обо), от (ото), пере or пре, по, под (подо), при, про, раз (разо), с (со), у. We must remark that the prepositions which end in a vowel, never undergo a change, whilst those which end in a consonant, take the vowel *o*, when they have to be united to a verb which begins with two or three consonants, as well as to the verb идти (*sl. umi*), in which the vowel *u* besides that changes into the semi-vowel (*й*).

The prepositions без (безо), пред (предо), and also с (со) in the meaning of a reciprocal action, modifying the acceptance of a verb, do not communicate to it the meaning of the completion of an action. Joined to one of these prepositions, the verb remains in its imperfect aspect, as: безчестить, *to dishonour*; предвидеть, *to foresee*; содействовать, *to cooperate*.



It is the same with adverbs used sometimes for prepositions, e. g. *ПРОТИВОСТОЯТЬ*, *to resist*; *МИМОИДТИ*, *to come by*.

Care must be taken not to confound the prepositional verbs with the verbs which are derived from nouns formed with a preposition, as: *РАЗУМѢТЬ*, *to understand*; from *РАЗУМЪ*, *intelligence*; *ПОМНИТЬ*, *to remember*, from *ПАМЯТЬ*, *memory*; *СОВѢСТИТЬСЯ*, *to have a conscience*, from *СОВѢСТЬ*, *conscience*. These verbs belong to the class of the incomplete simple verbs.

65.—The prepositional verbs, with regard to their delineation, differ among them, according as they are formed from the defective, incomplete, complete or double simple verbs.

1. Those which are derived from a *defective* simple verb, have only the *perfect* aspect, which is purely the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, joined to one of the prepositions above enumerated. Such are:

Пожелать, to wish, I. 1.	Растерять, to lose, I. 3.
Покарать, to chastise, —	Возымѣть, to have, I. 4.
Отмечать, to imagine, —	Завладѣть, to possess, —
Воспымать, to burst into flames, —	Сумѣть, to know, —
Нарыдаться, to wail, —	Оцениться, to whelp, II. 1.
Постараться, to endeavour, —	Остепениться, to grow sedate, —
Ошельмовать, to treat like a rogue, I. 2.	Возгордиться, to be proud of, II. 4.
Возопіять (for <i>взвоніять</i> ), to cry out, I. 3.	Пощадить, to spare, —
	Затрепетать, to tremble, II. 7.
	Поблѣкнуть, to fade, III. 1.

Some verbs derived from the defective simple verbs, have also the *imperfect* aspect, which is formed from the iterative aspect, not used in the simple verb and taken in its contracted form, as will be seen later (2. б).

The preceding and the following examples show that the *perfect* aspect of a prepositional verb is formed from the im-

perfect aspect of the simple verb, by the mere joining of a preposition, without any change in the termination of the verb. Further, the infinitive and the imperative from imperfect become *perfect* (стараться, *to endeavour*; старайся, *endeavour*, and постараться, *to use all one's endeavours*; постарайся, *use all your endeavours*); the present (старáюсь, *I endeavour*) becomes a *perfect future* (постарáюсь, *I shall endeavour, I shall use all my endeavours*), and the imperfect preterit (старáлся, *I endeavoured*) becomes a *perfect preterit* (постарáлся, *I have used all my endeavours*).

As the prepositions serve generally to form the perfect preterit and future of the defective simple verbs, custom only can show what is the preposition which a verb takes in order to designate the completion of an action. Thus *за* expresses a beginning; *но*, a part; *до*, the finishing; *от*, the discontinuance; *про*, all the time; *с*, *у*, *за*, *по*, the completion and simultaneousness; *бы*, *из*, *об*, *при*, *пере*, a totality. Е. г. заговорить, *to begin to speak*; поговорить, *to speak a little*; договорить, *to finish speaking*; отговорить, *to leave off speaking*; проговорить, *to pass the time in speaking*; сделать, *to have made*; украсть, *to have stolen*; засмяться, *to have laughed*; покраснеть, *to have blushed*; выходить, исходить, обходить, *to have gone all over*; приѣсть, *to have eaten all up*; передѣлать, *to have made all*.

2. Derived from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have two aspects: 1) the *perfect* aspect, and 2) the *imperfect* aspect, which are formed, the former from the imperfect, and the latter from the iterative aspect of the simple verb, at first without any change in the terminations, at other times with contraction, sometimes even with and without contraction at the same time: occasionally they vary widely from the general rules for the formation of the prepositional verbs. We sometimes find: a quite irregular formation, the want of one of the two aspects perfect or imperfect, the loss or non-existence of the simple verb which has

formed the prepositional verb, and several other irregularities which are mentioned below.

We must remark that in the prepositional verbs the tonic accent remains upon the same syllable as in the simple verb, with exception of the verbs formed with the preposition *бы*, which in the perfect aspect transfer the accent of this preposition. Some monosyllabic verbs, taking a preposition, transfer also, in the preterit of the perfect aspect, the accent to the preposition; as: *умеръ, отперъ, прибылъ, началъ, &c.*, from *умерѣть, to die; отперѣть, to open; прибыть, to arrive; начать, to begin.*

a) The perfect and imperfect aspects of the prepositional verb preserve both the terminations of the imperfect and iterative aspects of the simple verb. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Уга́даты, to guess, I. 1. . . . .	уга́дываты, I. 1.
Обду́маты, to deliberate, — . . . . .	обду́мываты, —
Отдѣ́лать, to finish, — . . . . .	отдѣ́лывать, —
Заигра́ть, to play, — . . . . .	заигрыва́ть, —
Оку́таты, to wrap about, — . . . . .	оку́тывать, —
Промота́ть, to squander, — . . . . .	прома́тывать, —
Смѣша́ть, to mingle, — . . . . .	смѣшива́ть, —
Узна́ть, to recognise, — . . . . .	узнава́ть, —
Прикова́ть, to chain to, I. 2. . . . .	прико́вывать, —
Обрисова́ть, to outline, — . . . . .	обрисовыва́ть, —
Основа́ть, to found, — . . . . .	осно́вывать, —
Завоева́ть, to conquer, — . . . . .	завое́вывать, —
Прогуля́ть, to walk, I. 3. . . . .	прогу́ливать, —
Осмѣ́ять, to laugh at, — . . . . .	осмѣ́ивать, —
Усе́ять, to sow, — . . . . .	усѣ́вать, —
Ослабе́ть, to grow weak, I. 4. . . . .	ослабѣ́вать, —
Догове́ть, to fast, — . . . . .	дога́вливать, —
Согре́ть, to warm, — . . . . .	согре́вать, —
Зажари́ть, to roast, II. 1. . . . .	зажари́вать, —
Усмотре́ть, to discern, — . . . . .	усма́тривать, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Загорѣть, to be sunburnt, II. 1. . . . .	загарáть, I. 1.
Выкроить, to cut out, — . . . . .	выкра́ивать, —
Наклеить, to glue on, — . . . . .	накле́ивать, —
Выстроить, to build, — . . . . .	выстра́ивать, —
Отстоять, to defend, — . . . . .	отста́ивать, —
Отпороть, to unrip, — . . . . .	отпа́рывать, —
Окормить, to poison, II. 2. . . . .	ока́рмливать, —
Выловить, to catch all, — . . . . .	выла́вливать, —.
Вытерпеть, to endure, — . . . . .	выте́рпывать, —
Вскипеть, to boil up, — . . . . .	вскипа́ть, —
Вылечить, to heal, II. 3. . . . .	выле́чивать, —
Упрочить, to secure, — . . . . .	упро́чивать, —
Заслужить, to deserve, — . . . . .	заслуж́ивать, —
Умолчать, to keep secret, — . . . . .	умал́чивать, —
Сладить, to arrange, II. 4. . . . .	сла́живать, —
Показать, to show, — . . . . .	пока́зывать, —
Привязать, to bind, — . . . . .	привя́зывать, —
Заколотить, to knock, II. 5. . . . .	закола́чивать, —
Вымолотить, to thrash, — . . . . .	вымола́чивать, —
Выплакать, to weep out, — . . . . .	выпла́кывать, —
Испросить, to ask, II. 6. . . . .	испра́шивать, —
Подписать, to subscribe, — . . . . .	подпи́сывать, —
Вымостить, to pave, II. 7. . . . .	выма́щивать, —
Взыскать, to exact, — . . . . .	взы́скивать, —
Утопить, to drown, III. 1. . . . .	утопа́ть, —
Вытянуть, to stretch, — . . . . .	вытя́гивать, —
Увянуть, to wither, — . . . . .	увяда́ть, —
Загнуть, to bend, — . . . . .	загиба́ть, —
Всосать, to absorb, — . . . . .	вса́сывать, —
Запереть, to shut, III. 2. . . . .	запира́ть, —
Вытереть, to rub out, — . . . . .	вытира́ть, —
Умереть, to die, — . . . . .	умира́ть, —
Отобрать, to choose out, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	отбира́ть, —
Прибить, to affix, — . . . . .	прибива́ть, —
Прилить, to pour to, — . . . . .	прилива́ть, —
Выпить, to drink out, — . . . . .	выпива́ть, —
Зашить, to sew up, — . . . . .	зашива́ть, —

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
ВЫМЫТЬ, to wash out, III. 2. . . . .	ВЫМЫВАТЬ, I. 1.
Закрѣть, to cover, — . . . . .	закрѣвать, —
Ужѣться, to settle, . . . . .	ужѣваться, —
Напѣть, to tune, — . . . . .	напѣвать, —
Проспѣть, to sleep away, — . . . . .	просыпѣть, —
Запѣчь, to bake, — . . . . .	запѣкать, —
Изсѣчь, to cut out, — . . . . .	изсѣкать, —
Сѣзѣть, to eat up, — . . . . .	сѣзѣдѣть, —
Вплѣсть, to plait in, — . . . . .	вплѣтѣть, —

b) In the verbs in *umb* of the IId conjugation, the termination of the iterative aspect is often contracted into *ямь*, or into *амь* after a hissing consonant; this happens especially when the simple verb belongs to the class of the defective verbs, that is when the iterative aspect is varying. In this case the tonic accent is placed on the termination. Such are the following verbs:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Обвинѣть, to accuse, II. 1. . . . .	обвинѣть, I. 3.
Утолѣть, to appease, — . . . . .	утолѣть, —
Примириѣть, to reconcile, — . . . . .	примириѣть, —
Сотвориѣть, to create, — . . . . .	сотвориѣть, —
Испестриѣть, to variegate, — . . . . .	испестриѣть, —
Размыслиѣть, to meditate, — . . . . .	размыслиѣть, —
Умудриѣться, to grow wise, — . . . . .	умудриѣться, —
Ухириѣться, to use art, — . . . . .	ухириѣться, —
Погубиѣть, to ruin, II. 2. . . . .	погубиѣть, —
Утомиѣть, to fatigue, — . . . . .	утомиѣть, —
Потрафиѣть, to hit, — . . . . .	потрафиѣть, —
Ослѣпиѣть, to blind, — . . . . .	ослѣпиѣть, —
Поспѣшиѣть, to hasten, II. 3. . . . .	поспѣшиѣть, I. 1.
Совершиѣть, to perfect, — . . . . .	совершиѣть, —
Означѣть, to denote, — . . . . .	означѣть, —
Отягчиѣть, to burden, — . . . . .	отягчиѣть, —



1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Повредить, to damage, II. 4. . . . .	повреждать, I. 1.
Побудить, to incite, — . . . . .	побуждать, —
Приблизить, to draw near, — . . . . .	приближать, —
Замѣтить, to remark, II. 5. . . . .	замѣчать, —
Погасить, to put out, II. 6. . . . .	погашать, —
Обольстить, to seduce, II. 7. . . . .	обольщать, —
Отомстить, to avenge, — . . . . .	отмщать, —
Посвятить, to hallow, — . . . . .	посвящать, —

c) Sometimes in the same verb the imperfect aspect is formed in two ways, with contraction and without contraction. Here we must remark that, if the prepositional verb retains its primitive, simple, physical meaning, the termination of its imperfect aspect is without contraction, and that on the contrary it is contracted, if the prepositional verb takes an abstract, figurative, intellectual acceptation, as is seen in the following examples:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Разбранить, to scold, II. 1. . . . .	разбранивать, I. 1. . . . .	& Возбранить, to forbid, I. 1. . . . .	возбранять, I. 3. . . . .
Запалить, to kindle, — . . . . .	запаливать, — . . . . .	& Воспалить, to inflame, — . . . . .	воспалять, — . . . . .
Переполнить, to fill, — . . . . .	перепаливать, — . . . . .	& Исполнить, to fulfil, — . . . . .	исполнять, — . . . . .
Перестроить, to rebuild, — . . . . .	перестраивать, — . . . . .	& Устроить, to arrange, — . . . . .	устроить, — . . . . .
Завострить, to sharpen, — . . . . .	завостривать, — . . . . .	& Поострить, to excite, — . . . . .	поощрять, — . . . . .
Изловить, to catch, II. 2. . . . .	излавливать, — . . . . .	& Уловить, to surprise, II. 2. . . . .	улавливать, — . . . . .
Подмочить, to wet, II. 3. . . . .	подмачивать, — . . . . .	& Омочить, to steep, II. 3. . . . .	омочать, I. 1. . . . .
Выучить, to teach, — . . . . .	выучивать, — . . . . .	& Научить, to initiate, — . . . . .	научать, — . . . . .
Загородить, to fence, II. 4. . . . .	загораживать, — . . . . .	& Оградить, to guard, II. 4. . . . .	ограждать, — . . . . .
Пересудить, to rejudge, — . . . . .	пересуживать, — . . . . .	& Осудить, to condemn, — . . . . .	осуждать, — . . . . .
Осадить, to plant, — . . . . .	осаживать, — . . . . .	& Осаждать, to besiege, — . . . . .	осаждать, — . . . . .
Выпередить, to outgo, — . . . . .	выперёживать, — . . . . .	& Предупредить, to prevent, — . . . . .	предупреждать, — . . . . .
Вывтвердить, to rehearse, — . . . . .	вывтёрживать, — . . . . .	& Утвердить, to affirm, — . . . . .	утверждать, — . . . . .
Помутить, to muddy, II. 5. . . . .	помучивать, — . . . . .	& Возмутить, to raise, II. 7. . . . .	возмущать, — . . . . .
Засвѣтить, to light, — . . . . .	засвѣчивать, — . . . . .	& Просвѣтить, to enlighten, — . . . . .	просвѣщать, — . . . . .
Закрасить, to colour, II. 6. . . . .	закрашивать, — . . . . .	& Украсить, to adorn, II. 6. . . . .	украшать, — . . . . .
Загоститься, to visit, II. 7. . . . .	загашиваться, — . . . . .	& Угостить, to regale, II. 7. . . . .	угощать, — . . . . .

d) The inchoative verbs in *нуть*, which by their nature have not the iterative aspect, take, in the

formation of the imperfect aspect of prepositional verbs, the termination *amb*, e. g.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Замёрзнуть, to freeze, III. 1. . . . .	замерзать, I. 1.
Потухнуть, to go out, — . . . . .	потухать, —
Погибнуть, to perish, — . . . . .	погибать, —
Окиснуть, to grow sour, — . . . . .	окисать, —
Утихнуть, to abate, — . . . . .	утихать, —
Погаснуть, to go out, — . . . . .	погасать, —
Озябнуть, to starve, — . . . . .	озябать, —
Замокнуть, to grow wet, — . . . . .	замокать, —
Изсохнуть, to dry up, — . . . . .	изсыхать, —
Издохнуть, to die, — . . . . .	издыхать, —
Привыкнуть, to habituate, — . . . . .	привыкать, —
Исчезнуть, to vanish, — . . . . .	исчезать, —

e) The Russian language has some prepositional verbs, the simple verb of which is no more used or is lost. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Оправдать, to justify, I. 1. . . . .	оправдывать, I. 1.
Обнаро́довать, to publish, I. 2. . . . .	обнаро́дывать, —
Затѣять, to devise, I. 3. . . . .	затѣвать, —
Одолѣть, to surmount, I. 4. . . . .	одоле́вать, —
Укоренить, to root, II. 1. . . . .	укореня́ть, I. 3.
Водворить, to settle, — . . . . .	водворя́ть, —
Разорить, to ruin, — . . . . .	разоря́ть, —
Ударить, to strike, — . . . . .	ударя́ть, —
Повторить, to repeat, — . . . . .	повторя́ть, —
Истребить, to destroy, II. 2. . . . .	истребля́ть, —
Одушевить, to animate, — : . . . . .	одушевля́ть, —
Усыновить, to adopt, — . . . . .	усыновля́ть, —
Надоумить, to instruct, — : . . . . .	надоумли́вать, I. 1.
Приложить, to add, II. 3. . . . .	прилага́ть, —
Уничижить, to humble, — . . . . .	уничижа́ть, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Уничтѣ́жить, to annul, II. 3. . . . .	уничтожа́ть, I. 1.
Вооружі́ть, to arm, — . . . . .	вооружа́ть, —
Внуші́ть, to suggest, — . . . . .	внуша́ть, —
Вручи́ть, to hand, — . . . . .	вруча́ть, —
Исто́щить, to exhaust, — . . . . .	исто́ща́ть, —
Сооруди́ть, to erect, II. 4. . . . .	сооружа́ть, —
Побѣди́ть, to vanquish, — . . . . .	побѣжда́ть, —
Услади́ть, to delight, — . . . . .	услажда́ть, —
Пронзи́ть, to pierce, — . . . . .	пронза́ть, —
Обидѣ́ть, to offend, — . . . . .	обижа́ть, —
Встрѣ́тить, to meet, II. 5. . . . .	встрѣча́ть, —
Отвѣ́тить, to answer, — . . . . .	отвѣча́ть, —
Воскреси́ть, to revive, II. 6. . . . .	воскреша́ть, —
Помѣ́стить, to place, II. 7. . . . .	помѣща́ть, —
Поду́стить, to instigate, — . . . . .	поду́ща́ть, —
Посѣ́тить, to visit, — . . . . .	посѣща́ть, —
Украти́ть, to appease, — . . . . .	у́кроща́ть, —
Насы́тить, to satiate, — . . . . .	насыща́ть, —
Защи́тить, to protect, — . . . . .	защища́ть, —
Дости́гнуть, to reach, III. 1. . . . .	достига́ть, —
Воскрѣ́снуть, to resuscitate, — . . . . .	воскреса́ть, —
Оку́нуть, to dip, — . . . . .	оку́нывать, —
Замкну́ть, to lock, — . . . . .	замы́кать, —
Ушибі́ть, to bruise, — . . . . .	ушиба́ть, —
Просте́рть, to extend, III. 2. . . . .	простира́ть, —
Обу́ть, to put shoes, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	обува́ть, —
Попра́ть, to trample, — . . . . .	попира́ть, —
Распя́ть, to crucify, — . . . . .	распина́ть, —
Нача́ть, to begin, — . . . . .	начина́ть, —
Отня́ть, to take out, — . . . . .	отнима́ть, —
Отверзти́, to open, — . . . . .	отверза́ть, —
Обрѣ́сти, to find out, — . . . . .	обрѣ́тать, —
Сче́сть, to count, — . . . . .	счита́ть, —
Разсвѣ́сти, to grow light, — . . . . .	разсвѣта́ть, —
Запря́чь, to put to, — . . . . .	запряга́ть, —

Among these verbs there are several which are also used with other prepositions besides those which are above indicated.

f) The following verbs do not form their perfect aspect from the imperfect aspect of the used simple verb, but from some disused aspect of this simple verb.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Замѣнить, II. 1 (instead of *замѣнять*). замѣнять, to compensate, I. 3.  
 Застрѣлить, — (instead of *застрѣлять*). застрѣливать, to shoot, kill, I. 1.  
 Вскочить, II. 3 (instead of *вскакать*) . . вскакивать, to leap in, —  
 Укусить, II. 6 (instead of *укусать*) . . укусывать, to bite, —  
 Возвѣстить, II. 7 (instead of *возвѣщать*). возвѣщать, to announce, —  
 Поглотить, — (instead of *поглощать*) . поглощать, to swallow up, —

g) Some prepositional verbs are formed irregularly, and occasionally they have two formations, one regular, and the other irregular. Such are:

## REGULAR FORMATION.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

## IRREGULAR FORMATION.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Презрѣть, to despise, II. 1. . . презирать, I. 1	& Обозрѣть, to examine, II. 1. обозрѣвать, I. 1.
Смыкать, to find, II. 7. . . смыкивать, —	& Снискать, to obtain, II. 7. . . снискивать, —
Обуздать, to curb, I. 1. . . обуздывать, —	& Вязуздать, to bridle, I. 1. . . вязуздывать, —
Создать, to build, <i>irr.</i> (созижду) созидать, —	& Создать (созда́тъ), . . . . . создавать (создаю).
Нагрести, to rake up, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . нагрѣбать, —	& Погребсти, to bury, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . погребать, I. 1.
Позволить, to permit, II. 1. . . . . позволять, I. 3	& Уволить, to discharge, II. 1. . . . . увольнять, I. 3.
Осмѣять, to deride, I. 3. . . . . осмѣивать, I. 1	& Насмѣяться, to laugh at, I. 3. . . . . насмѣхаться, I. 1
Обвязать, to bind, II. 4. . . . . обвязывать, —	& Обязать, to oblige, II. 4. . . . . обязывать, —
Сравнить, to even, I. 3. . . . . сравнивать, —	& Сравнить, to compare, II. 1. . . . . сравнивать, —
Принять, to take, <i>irr.</i> (примѣ) принимать, —	& Вынуть, to take out, III. 1. . . . . вынимать, —
Прибѣжать, to run up, <i>irr.</i> . . . . . прибѣгать, —	& Прибѣгнуть, to resort, III. 1. . . . . прибѣгать, —

h) Other prepositional verbs have no perfect aspect and therefore fall into the class of defective simple verbs; such are the following:

Обожать, to adore, I. 1.	Ожидать, to wait, I. 1.
Обладать, to dominate, —	Обитать, to habit, —
Объщать, to promise, —	Опасаться, to fear, —
Завѣщать, to bequeath, —	Обуревать, to agitate, —
Увѣщавать, to exhort, —	Подражать, to imitate, —
Охуждать, to criticize, —	Подобать, to be necessary, —
Осязать, to touch, —	Порицать, to blame, —



Подозрѣвать, to suspect, I. 1.	Ущербля́ться, to decrease, I. 3.
Сомнѣваться, to doubt, —	Сожалѣть, to take pity, I. 4.
Созерцать, to contemplate, —	Смы́слить, to understand, II. 1.
Изобилѣвать, to abound, I. 2.	Состо́ять, to consist, —
Наслѣдовать, to inherit, —	Упрямиться, to be obstinate, II. 2.
Повиноваться, to obey, —	Содержать, to maintain, II. 3.
Привѣтствовать, to welcome, —	Предвидѣть, to foresee, II. 4.
Обонять, to scent, I. 3.	Походить, to resemble, —
Упражнять, to occupy, —	Зависѣть, to depend, II. 6.

2) Lastly the following simple verbs have the properties of prepositional verbs, in other words they express the accomplishment of an action without being joined to a preposition and without having the termination of unity in *нѣтъ*. They are called *perfect simple* verbs. Some of them have also the *iterative* aspect.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	3) <i>Iterative asp.</i>
Благословить, to bless, II. 2. . . . .	благословля́ть, I. 3. . . . .	—
Бросить, to throw, II. 6. . . . .	бросать, I. 1. . . . .	брасывать.
Быть, to be, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	быва́ть, — . . . . .	бывывать.
Велѣть, to order, II. 1. . . . .	(велѣть) . . . . .	велѣвать.
Воротить, to turn, II. 5. . . . .	вороча́ть, I. 1. . . . .	ворачивать.
Дать, to give, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	дава́ть, — (даю) . . . . .	—
Дѣть, to put, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	дѣва́ть, — . . . . .	—
Женить, to marry, II. 1. . . . .	(жени́ть) . . . . .	—
Казнить, to execute, II. 1. . . . .	(казни́ть) . . . . .	—
Кончить, to end, II. 3. . . . .	конча́ть, — . . . . .	канчива́ть.
Купить, to buy, II. 2. . . . .	(покупа́ть). — . . . . .	—
Лечь, to lie, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	ложиться, II. 3. . . . .	—
Лишить, to deprive, II. 3. . . . .	лиша́ть, I. 1. . . . .	—
Пасть, to fall, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	пада́ть, — . . . . .	(пада́ть).
Плѣнить, to captivate, II. 1. . . . .	плѣня́ть, I. 3. . . . .	—
Простить, to pardon, II. 7. . . . .	проща́ть, I. 1. . . . .	—
Пустить, to let go, — . . . . .	пуска́ть and пуща́ть, —	—
Ранить, to hurt, II. 1. . . . .	(рани́ть) . . . . .	—
Родить, to beget, II. 4. . . . .	рожа́ть and ражда́ть, —	—



1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect aspect.	3) Iterative asp.
Рѹшѣть, to break down, II. 3. (рѹшить) . . . . .	рѹшѣть, — . . . . .	рѹшѣвать.
Рѣшѣть, to decide, II. 3. . . . .	рѣшѣть, — . . . . .	—
Свободѣть, to deliver, II. 4. . . . .	свободѣть, — . . . . .	—
Стать, { to become, <i>irr.</i> . . . . становѣться, II. 2. . . . .	становѣться, II. 2. . . . .	становѣваться.
Стать, { to be sufficient, <i>irr.</i> ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю) . . . . .	ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю) . . . . .	—
Ступѣть, to go, II. 2. . . . .	ступѣть, — . . . . .	—
Сѣсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	сѣдѣться, II. 4. . . . .	—
Хватѣть, to seize, II. 5. . . . .	хватѣть, I. 1. . . . .	хвачѣвать.
Явѣть, to show, II. 2. . . . .	явѣть, I. 3. . . . .	—
Ять, to take, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	имѣть, I. 1. and II. 2 (имѣю & ѣмлю). —	—

To the list of perfect simple verbs we must add some verbs taken from foreign languages and ending in *овать*, e. g. *атаковѣть*, to attack; *конфисковѣть*, to confiscate, which express both the perfect and imperfect aspects with the same termination and without preposition.

The verbs *велѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *ранѣть* and *рѹшѣть*, do not change their termination to form the perfect and imperfect aspects; the perfect future (*велю*, *женю*, *казню*, *раню* and *рѹшу*) is also used for the present. In the verb *купѣть*, the present and the imperfect preterit are borrowed from the prepositional verb *покупѣть*. The verbs *даровѣть*, to give; *миновѣть*, to pass, and *образовѣть*, to form, as well as the inflections *даровѣль*, *миновѣль* and *образовѣль*, are of the perfect aspect; but the inflections *дарю*, *миню* and *образую* are of the present. The verb *миновѣть* forms its future with *миню*, *минѣшь*, and the preterit has the two inflections *минѣль* and *миновѣль*.

With regard to the perfect simple verbs we remark that in such of them as express a physical action, performed by a single motion (as *бросѣть*, *дать*, *дѣть*, *пасть*, *пустѣть*, *ступѣть*, *хватѣть*, *ять*) the meaning of their perfect aspect is the same as that of the aspect of unity in complete verbs (§ 62).

These perfect simple verbs, with the exception of *благословѣть*, *жснѣть*, *казнѣть*, *лишѣть*, *ранѣть* and *плѣнѣть*, form also prepositional verbs. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
Забѣть, to forget, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	забыва́ть, I. 1.
Повелѣть, to order, II. 1. . . . .	повелѣва́ть, —
Разда́ть, to distribute, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	раздава́ть, —
Одѣ́ть, to dress, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	одѣва́ть, —
Раску́пить, to buy up, II. 2. . . . .	раскупа́ть, —
Зале́чь, to hide one's self, <i>irr.</i> . . . .	залега́ть, —
Упа́сть, to fall, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	упада́ть, —
Распростѣ́ться, to take leave, II. 7. . .	распроща́ться, —
Пропусти́ть, to let pass, — . . . . .	пропуска́ть, —
Уроди́ть, to produce, II. 4. . . . .	урожа́ть, —
Разруши́ть, to destroy, II. 6. . . . .	разруша́ть, —
Разрѣши́ть, to decide, — . . . . .	разрѣша́ть, —
Освободи́ть, to free, II. 4. . . . .	освобожда́ть, —
Доста́ть, to procure, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	достава́ть, —
Останови́ть, to stop, II. 2. . . . .	останавлива́ть, —
Высту́пить, to go out, II. 2. . . . .	выступа́ть, —
Засѣ́сть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> . . . . .	засѣда́ть, —
Изъяви́ть, to indicate, II. 2. . . . .	изъявля́ть, I. 3.

The verbs *бро́сить*, *вороти́ть*, *кони́чить* and *хвати́ть* have the two perfect aspects in their prepositional verbs, like those derived from the complete simple verbs, as we shall subsequently see. For the prepositional verbs derived from *ять*, see § 65. 3.

3. Such prepositional verbs as are derived from the *complete* simple verbs, have in addition to the preceding *perfect* and *imperfect* aspects, a second perfect aspect, which, being formed from the aspect of unity of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be performed at one time and by a single movement, whereas the perfect aspect, which is formed from the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be accomplished by various motions, and that occupied or will occupy a certain length of time.

The same remark applies to such prepositional verbs as are formed from certain double verbs, and also from the perfect simple verbs бросить, воротить, кончить and хватить; e. g.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>		2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
a) <i>of duration.</i>	b) <i>of unity.</i>	
Выболтать, I. 1.	выболтнуть, III. 1.	выбалтывать, to divulge, I. 1.
Накидать, — .	накинуть, — .	накидывать, to heap up, —
Вспорхать, — .	вспорхнуть, — .	вспархивать, to flutter, —
Выпрыгать, — .	выпрыгнуть, — .	выпрыгивать, to skip out, —
Столкать, — .	столкнуть, — .	сталкивать, to push down, —
Захлопать, — .	захлопнуть, — .	захлопывать, to shut with a clap, —
Забрызгать, —	забрызнуть, — .	забрызгивать, to besprinkle, —
Всовать, I. 2.	всунуть, — .	всовывать, to shove in, —
Выклевать, — .	выклюнуть, — .	выклёвывать, to peck out, —
Придавить, II. 2.	придагнуть, — .	придавливать, to press to, —
Окликать, II. 5.	окликнуть, — .	окликать, to call to, — .
Сдуть, <i>irr.</i> . .	сдунуть, — .	сдувать, to blow off, —
Поджечь, — .	поджигнуть, — .	поджигать, to fire, —
Вывалить, I. 3.	вывалить, II. 1.	вываливать, to throw out, —
Прокатать, I. 1.	прокатить, II. 5.	прокатывать, to roll through, —
Выломать, — .	выломить, II. 2.	выламывать, to break out, —
Сронять, I. 3.	сронить, II. 1.	срывать, to throw down, —
Вытаскать, I. 1.	вытащить, II. 3.	вытаскивать, to pull out, —
Забросать, — .	забросить, II. 6.	забрасывать, to throw beyond, —
Сворочать, — .	своротить, II. 5.	сворачивать, to avert, —
Окончать, — .	окончить, II. 3.	оканчивать, to terminate, —
Захватать, — .	захватить, II. 5.	захватывать, to catch, —

The simple verbs говорить, ловить, бить, брать and класть, to indicate an action performed by one movement, borrow their perfect aspect from another verb; as:

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>
	a) <i>of duration.</i> b) <i>of unity.</i>
Говорить, to speak, say, II. 1.	поговорить . сказать, II. 4.
Ловить, to seize, catch, II. 2.	изловить . . поймать, I. 1.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*a) *of duration.*    b) *of unity.*

Бить, to beat, *irr.* . . . . побить . . . ударить, II. 1.  
 Брать, to take, *irr.* . . . . побрать, . . . взять, *irr.* (возьмѣ).  
 Класть, to lay, *irr.* . . . . покласть . . . положить, II. 3.

4. From the *double* simple verbs two prepositional verbs are formed, which with their two aspects, the *perfect* and the *imperfect*, have each a particular signification. Such are:

1) From the *definite* verb.2) From the *indefinite* verb.a) *Perfect asp.*    b) *Imperfect asp.*Выбрести, *irr.* выбродить, to go out, II. 4.

Выбѣжать, — выбѣгать, to flee, I. 1. . .

Завезти, — завозить, to bring back, II. 4.

Провести, — проводить, to conduct, —

Загнать, — . . . . . загонять, to drive, I. 3.

Выйти, — . . . . . выходить, to go out, II. 4.

Влетѣть, II. 5. влетать, to fly in, I. 1. . .

Донести, *irr.* доносить, to denounce, II. 6.

Вползти, — . . . . . вползать, to creep in, I. 1.

Выѣхать, — . . . . . выѣзжать, to go out, I. 1.

a) *Perfect asp.*b) *Imperfect asp.*

&amp; Выбродить, II. 4. выбраживать, to ferment, I. 1.

&amp; Выбѣгать, I. 1. выбѣгивать, to precede, —

&amp; Завозить, II. 4. заваживать, to transport, —

&amp; Проводить, — . . . . . провожать, to accompany, —

&amp; Загонять, I. 3. загонивать, to harass, —

&amp; Выходить, II. 4. выхаживать, to obtain, —

&amp; Перелетать, I. 1. перелѣтывать, to fly by, —

&amp; Доносить, II. 6. донашивать, to wear out, —

&amp; Отползать, I. 1. отпалзывать, to go away, —

&amp; Выѣздить, II. 4. выѣзживать, to train, —

From the other double verbs are formed prepositional verbs as from the incomplete or complete verbs. The verbs *валить*, *катить*, *ломить*, *ронить* and *тащить* form prepositional verbs with the two perfect aspects of duration and of unity, as we have seen above.

## EXERCISES ON THE VERBS.

Regular  
verbs.  
—  
Present.

I do good, as much as I wish. Thou desirest in-  
 Я дѣлать добро, сколько я желать. Ты желать

struct thyself. He imagines that he knows all the sciences,  
 учиться. Онъ думать что онъ знать весь наука,

and he boasts of his success. We dare not believe in  
 и хвастать (*instr.*) свой успѣхъ. Я дерзать не верить (*dat.*)



your words, even when you speak the truth. My neighbours  
вашъ слово, хотя ты говорить правда. Мой сосѣдъ

only live on bread, and trust in Providence.  
одинъ питаться (*instr.*) хлѣбъ, и уповать на (*acc.*) Провидѣніе.

You trade in cloth, and you ask much.  
Ты торговать (*instr.*) сукно, и ты требовать (*gen.*) много.

The pigeon cooes; the turtle moans; dogs bark; puppies  
Голубь ворковать; горлица стонать; собака лаять; щенокъ

yelp; the frog croaks; the raven croaks; the crow caws;  
бrehать; лягушка квакать; воронъ гракать; ворона каркать;

lions roar; the stag bells; fowls cluck; the cat  
левъ рыкать; олень токовать; курица кудахтать; кошка

mews; oxen bellow; the bee hums; the serpent hisses;  
мяукать; быкъ мычать; пчела жужжать; змѣя шипѣть;

eagles scream; nightingales twitter; sheep and lambs  
орѣль трубить; соловей щебетать; овца и ягненокъ

bleat; pigs grunt; the fox yelps; the ass brays; the  
блеять; свинья хрюкать; лисица визжать; осѣль реветъ;

turkey gobbles; the quail calls; the cock crows;  
калкунъ клохтать; перепѣлка вавакать; пѣтухъ кукурекать;

the magpie chatters; the parrot prates. The thunder roars;  
сорока скрекотать; попугай болтать. Громъ гремятъ;

water boils; the doors creak; the brooks murmur; the fire  
вода кипѣть; дверь скрипѣть; ручей жужжать; огонь

crackles; the stars twinkle; the sun shines; honey-bees  
трещать; звѣзда сверкать; солнце свѣтитъ; пчела

swarm; diamonds sparkle; dry leaves rattle; the wind  
роится; алмазъ блестѣть; сухой листь хрустѣть; вѣтеръ

whistles; the snow melts. The sun illumines the earth with  
свистать; снѣгъ таять. Солнце озарять земля (*instr.*)



its rays, warms and vivifies her. The earth turns  
 свой лучъ, грѣть и живить онъ. Земля обращаться  
 round the sun. You grieve in vain.  
 вокругъ (*gen.*) солнце. Ты горевать напрасно.

*Preterit.* I walked yesterday on the bank of the river, when  
 Я гулять вчера по (*dat.*) берегъ рѣкѣ, когда  
 the sun was setting. My sister sat under a tree,  
 солнце садиться. Мой сестра сидѣть подъ (*instr.*) дерево,  
 which was shaken by the wind. Yesterday we worked,  
 который качаться (*instr.*) вѣтеръ. Вчера я работать,  
 read, wrote and drew much. The sheep perished  
 читать, писать и рисовать много. Овца мереть  
 through the cold. His mother has been dead a long time.  
 отъ (*gen.*) стужа. Онъ мать умереть давно.  
 The enemies have shut him up in the fortress. This  
 Непріятель запереть онъ въ (*prep.*) крѣпость. Э'тотъ  
 man has become blind, and his wife has become deaf. My  
 человекъ ослѣпнуть, и онъ женѣ оглохнуть. Мой  
 trees have withered, and my flowers have faded.  
 дерево высохнуть, и мой цвѣтъ завянуть.

*Future.* Moscow will shine long at the head of the cities  
 Москвѣ красоваться долго во (*prep.*) главѣ городъ  
 of Russia. Thou wilt play, and I shall write. The empire  
 русскій. Ты играть, и я писать. Государство  
 of Russia will develop itself incessantly, and acquire constantly  
 Россійскій возвышаться безпрерывно, и пріобрѣтать всегда  
 more force and glory. A great monarch will never  
 болѣе (*gen.*) сила и слава. Великій государь не никогда  
 die.  
 умереть.

*Imperative.* Do what thou art bidden, and do not think of resisting.  
 Дѣлать что ты говорить, и не думать упрямиться.

Do not lose hope, and trust in God. Go home,

Не терять надежда, и уповать на (*acc.*) Богъ. Ступать домой,

and do not dispute so much. Do not lose thy time, and

и не толковать столько. Не тратить (*gen.*) время, и

do not torment the animals. Speak always the truth, and

не мучить (*gen.*) животное. Говорить всегда правда, и

do not dispute about trifles.

не спорить о (*prep.*) пустякъ.

The nightingale sings; the horse neighs; the wolf howls. Irregular verbs.

Соловей пѣть; лошадь ржать; волкъ выть.

There are animals which sleep during the whole winter.

Быть зверь, который спать (*acc.*) весь зима.

Thou takest much upon thyself, and I do not under-

Ты брать много на (*acc.*) себя, и я не браться

take this affair. How do you crumple this book? Не

за (*acc.*) этотъ дѣло. Зачѣмъ ты мять этотъ книга. Онъ

lives at Moscow, and is thought to be a rich man.

жить въ (*prep.*) Москвѣ, и слыть (*instr.*) богатый человекъ.

The shepherd shears the sheep; the peasants spin the flax

Пастухъ стричь овца; крестьянинъ прясть лёнъ

and weave the linen. He wishes to sleep, and you wish

и ткать холстъ. Онъ хотѣть спать, и ты хотѣть

to play. My neighbour kept me as his own son, and could

играть. Мой сосѣдъ беречь я какъ родной сынъ, и мочь

not part with me. The enemies have burnt several

не разстаться со (*instr.*) я. Непріятель сжечь много

towns; they were inflamed by hatred and vengeance. The

городъ; онъ увлечься (*instr.*) злоба и мщенье.

shepherd pastured the sheep in the meadow. I will send

Пастухъ пастіи овца на (*prep.*) лугъ. Я послать

for the doctor, and thou wilt send me money. This

за (*instr.*) лѣкарь, и ты прислать я (*gen.*) деньги. Этотъ

town is flourishing, and it will flourish long through its  
 го́родъ цвѣсти́, и онъ цвѣсти́ до́лго (*instr.*)

strength and wealth. I will give thee a book, and thou, what  
 сила́ и бога́тство. Я да́ть ты кни́га, и ты что́

wilt thou give me? Thou canst not say: what will he give  
 да́ть я? Ты мо́жешь не говори́ть: что́ онъ да́ть

me for that? Do not take upon thyself,  
 я за (*acc.*) э́тотъ? Не брать на (*acc.*) себя́ (*gen.*) то́тъ (*gen.*)

what thou canst not perform. Children, live in peace, do not  
 что́ ты мо́жешь не испо́лнить. Дѣтя́, жи́ть жи́рно, не

swear, never lie, and behave yourselves well.

кля́сться, не нико́гда лгати́, и вести́ себя́ хороше́нко.

Definite and  
 indefinite  
 imperfect  
 aspect.

Beasts walk and run, birds and flies fly, fishes

Звѣрь ходи́ть и бѣга́ть, пти́ца и му́ха лета́ть, рыба́

swim, and worms crawl. See, a soldier is coming

пла́вать, и червь по́лзати́. Посмотре́ть, солда́тъ иди́ти

here; behind him runs a dog. Thou seest, how this  
 сю́да; за (*instr.*) онъ бе́жати́ соба́ка. Видѣ́ть, ка́къ э́тотъ

swallow flies fast; they fly always so. This mariner  
 ла́сточка лета́ть бы́стро; онъ лета́ть все́гда́ такъ. Сей моря́къ

has long sailed on the Black Sea. What is swimming

до́лго пла́вать по (*dat.*) Чѣ́рный Мо́ре. Что́ пла́вать

there on the water? The wives of the Slavonians carried

тамъ на (*prep.*) вода́? Же́на́ Сла́вянини́ носи́ть

water and fetched wood. What dost thou carry in

вода́ и таска́ть дрова́. Что́ ты нести́ въ (*prep.*)

this bag? See, what a heap of wood this

э́тотъ мы́шбо́къ? Смотре́ть, ка́кой вяза́нка дрова́ э́тотъ

man is drawing. One saw then what one had not

чело́вѣкъ таска́ть. Видѣ́ть то́гда (*gen.*) что́ не

seen for a long time.

видѣ́ть до́лго.

The enemy dashed into the town and seized the Perfect aspect of duration and of unity.  
 Непріятель рѣяться въ (acc.) городъ и кидаться на (acc.)

booty. It began to lighten. It lightened, there was a  
 корысть. Засверкать молнія. Сверкать молнія, гремѣть

violent clap of thunder, the earth trembled, the church  
 сильный громъ, земля дрожать, церковь

was shaken. My brother went to bed, and began to snore.  
 затрясаться. Мой братъ лечь и захрапѣть.

He gave a loud snore and awoke. May I hope, that  
 Храпѣть громко и просыпаться. Мочь я надѣяться, что

my lyre will touch once more your hard heart? The sun  
 мой лира трогать ещё вашъ хладный сердце? Солнце

began to shine, but not for a long time; it shone for a moment  
 заблистать, но не надолго; блестѣть

and disappeared. We have thrown out of the window all  
 и скрываться. Я выбрасывать за (acc.) окно весь

the sweepings; among the sweepings we have thrown out  
 соръ; въ (prep.) соръ я выбрасывать

also a paper of importance.

и бумага важная.

Last year I often went to the town. Socrates Iterative aspect.  
 (gen.) Прѣшлый годъ я ходитъ въ (acc.) городъ. Сократъ

was accustomed to say. The Germans had long inhabited  
 говоритъ. Нѣмецъ издавна жить

Novgorod. When living at Moscow, I  
 въ (prep.) Нѣвгородъ. Жить въ (prep.); Москвѣ, я

often went to the monastery of the Trinity. In my youth  
 ѣздить въ (acc.) Лавра Троицкій. Въ (acc.) молодой лѣто

I often lived in the country.

я жить въ (prep.) деревня.

If the stones could speak, they would teach thee Conditional and Sub-junctive.  
 Если бы камень мочь говорить, онъ научить бы ты

prudence. If any one had come to us (*gen.*) острѣжность. \* Если бѣ кто нибѣдь войти къ (*dat.*) я at this moment, he would have seen us in despair въ (*acc.*) этотъ минута, онъ увидѣть бы я въ (*prep.*) отчаяніе, and would have heard our groans and our sighs. There и слышать бы нашъ стenanіе и нашъ вздохъ. Есть are few things in the world, on which I мало (*gen.*) предметъ въ (*prep.*) свѣтъ, на (*acc.*) который я have not fixed my attention. There was no heart не обращать бы (*gen.*) вниманіе. Быть (*gen.*) не сердце so insensible that it did not melt into tears. такой каменный, который не изливаться бы въ (*prep.*) слеза.

The differ-  
ent tenses  
and aspects.

This soldier has served long and has received for his service a pension. It is not every soldier that will obtain *пенси́я*. Не всякій *выслу́живать* it with such distinction. He was in many онъ съ (*instr.*) такой отличіе. Онъ быть въ (*prep.*) много battles and distinguished himself everywhere by his *ре-сраженіе*, и *отличаться* *вездѣ* (*instr.*) *блиста-* markable courage. He distinguished himself particularly *тeльный храбрость*. Онъ *отличаться* *особенно* at the capture of a battery of the enemies. He mounted *при* (*prep.*) *взятіе* *баттарей непріятельскій*. Онъ *взбираться* first on the parapet, killed the hostile soldier, and *первый* на (*acc.*) *брустверь*, *убивать* *непріятельскій солдатъ*, и captured a cannon. For that he was rewarded by a *взять* *пушка*. За (*acc.*) это онъ *награждать* (*instr.*) decoration. Afterwards he was rewarded also with other *орденъ*. Потомъ онъ *награждать* и (*instr.*) *другой* marks of distinction. Now he will return to his country, *отличіе*. Теперь онъ *отправляться* въ (*acc.*) *родина*,



will establish himself with his family, and will relate  
 поселя́ться въ (*prep.*) сво́ей семье́, и разска́зывать о (*prep.*)  
 his campaigns, how he marched against the Turks and  
 сво́ей похóдь, какъ ходи́ть на (*acc.*) Ту́рокъ и  
 the French, how he beat the enemy, how he endured hunger,  
 Францу́зъ, какъ бить врагъ, какъ терпѣть го́лодь,  
 suffered from his wounds, and consoled himself with the  
 страда́ть отъ (*gen.*) ра́на, и уты́шаться (*instr.*)  
 thought that he is serving his sovereign with heart and  
 мыслѣ, что онъ служи́тъ (*dat.*) сво́ей Госуда́рь (*instr.*) се́рдце и  
 soul. Trust in me.  
 ду́шѣ. Упова́ть на (*acc.*) я.

## THE PARTICIPLE.

66.—The *participles* (прича́стія) have, as a part Division of the participles.  
 of the verb (§ 53) *voice*, *aspect* and *tense*, and, as  
 adjectives, that they may agree with their sub-  
 stantive, they have *gender*, *number* and *case*. As  
 regards voice, they are *active* or *neuter* (or, with  
 the pronoun *ся*, pronominal) and *passive*. They  
 have the same number of aspects as the verbs  
 whence they are derived, but they have only two  
 tenses, the *present* and *preterit*.

67.—The *active* and *neuter* (as also the prono- Active and neuter participles.  
 minal) participles are formed as follows:

1. The *present* participle is formed from the third  
 person plural of the present indicative by changing  
 the termination *мъ* into *щій* (neut. *щие*, fem. *щая*),  
 and this without any exception; e. g. дѣлающій,

*making*; любящій, *loving*; кричащій, *crying*; несущій, *bearing* (from дѣлаютъ, любятъ, кричатъ, несутъ).

2. The *preterit* or past participle is formed from the preterit indicative, by changing *лз* into *вшій*, and *з* (in such verbs as have not *лз* in the preterit) into *шій* (neut. *ше*, fem. *шая*); e. g. дѣлавшій, *having made*; носившій, *having borne*; поту́хшій, *being extinguished*; трё́шій, *having rubbed* (from дѣла́лз, носі́лз, поту́хз, трё́з). An exception to this rule is found in some irregular verbs in *ду* and *ту*, which, though forming their preterit in *лз*, change *у* of the present (or of the future) into *шій*; these are: блю́дшій, *having kept*; ве́дшій, *having lead*; па́дшій (and па́вшій), *having fallen*; пряд́шій, *having spun*; плёт́шій, *having plaited*; ме́тшій, *having swept*; обрѣ́тшій, *having found*; цвѣ́тшій, *having flowered* (from блю́ду, ве́ду, па́ду, пряду́, плету́, мету́, обрѣ́ту and цвѣ́ту), and also увя́дшій, *being faded*; шѣ́дшій, *having gone*; чѣ́тшій, *having counted* (from увя́ну, иду́ and чту́).

Passive  
participles.

68.—The *passive* participles, which are only formed from active verbs, are used both with the full and the apocopated termination, ending: *a*) in the *present*, in *емый*, *имый* or *омый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *емз*, *имз* or *омз* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination, *b*) in the *preterit*, in *нный* or *тый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *нз* or *мз* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the first person plural of the present indicative, by chang-

ing the termination *мѣ* into *мый*, as: *дѣлаемый*, *being made*; *любимый*, *being loved* (from *дѣлаемѣ* and *любимѣ*). But *движу*, *I move*, and *борю*, *I conquer*, from *движимый* and *боримый* (instead of *движемый* and *боремый*). The irregular verbs with the first person in *ѣмѣ* (i. e. with the accent), have *омый*, resuming the guttural consonant; e. g. *зовомый*, *being called*; *трясомый*, *being shaken*; *берегомый*, *being kept*; *пекомый*, *being baked* (from *зовѣмѣ*, *трясѣмѣ*, *бережѣмѣ*, *печѣмѣ*), and in like manner *сосомый*, *being sucked*; *искомый*, *being sought* (from *сосѣмѣ* and *ищемѣ*).

2. The *preterit* participle is formed of the preterit of the indicative by changing *мѣ* of the terminations *алѣ*, *ялѣ* and *плѣ*, into *нный* with permutation of the commutable consonants or with intercalation of the consonant *л*, as also in the first person of the present; *мѣ* and *ѣ* of the terminations *омѣ*, *нумѣ* and *ѣ*, into *тый*; e. g. *дѣланный*, *done*; *разсѣянный*, *dispersed*; *видѣнный*, *seen*; *палѣнный*, *burnt*; *явлѣнный*, *shown*; *винчѣнный*, *screwed*; *колѣтый*, *pricked*; *двинутый*, *moved*; *тѣртый*, *rubbed* (from *дѣлалѣ*, *разсѣялѣ*, *видѣлѣ*, *палѣлѣ*, *явлѣлѣ*, *винтилѣ*, *колѣлѣ*, *двинулѣ*, *тѣрѣлѣ*).

The passive participles of the irregular verbs, which also present some irregularities in their formation, have been given in the List of the irregular verbs, pages 138—141.

69.—The participles, being used as adjectives, and as such agreeing with their substantive in gender, number and case, are declined like the qualifying adjectives (§ 40, parad. 4). The active and neuter participles are only used in the full ter-

Declension  
of the  
participles.

mination, while the passive participles are used both in the full and the apocopated.

Passive  
verbs.

70.—The passive participles, both present and preterit, with the apocopated termination, joined to the auxiliary verb *быть*, form what is called the passive verb (страдательные глаголы); e. g. сынъ (*есть*) любимъ своимъ отцемъ, *the son is loved by his father*; ученикъ былъ награжденъ за прилежаніе, *the scholar has been rewarded for his assiduity*. We have here to remark that from the present and preterit of the passive participles are formed two aspects of the passive verb: the imperfect and the perfect aspect. As regards the present, preterit and future tenses, they are determined by the auxiliary verb *быть*, as seen below.

	1) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>	2) <i>Perfect asp.</i>
1. <i>Present:</i> . .	я ( <i>есмы</i> ) награждаемъ.	я ( <i>есмы</i> ) награждёнъ.
2. <i>Preterit:</i> . .	я былъ награждаемъ.	я былъ награждёнъ.
3. <i>Future:</i> . .	я буду награждаемъ.	я буду награждёнъ.

### EXERCISES ON THE PARTICIPLES.

Active and  
neuter par-  
ticiples.

The man who loves truth, hates falsehood. The child  
Человѣкъ любить правда, ненавидѣть ложь. Дитя  
that bathes; the dog that attacks passers by. The  
купаться; собака бросаться на (*acc.*) прохожіи.  
tradesman who received the goods from London,  
Купецъ, получаютъ товаръ изъ (*gen.*) Лондонъ,  
sold them advantageously. The tradesman who has received  
продавать онъ выгодно. Купецъ получить  
the goods from London, has sold them advantageously.  
товаръ изъ (*gen.*) Лондонъ, продать онъ выгодно.



Suffering from illness, he seeks relief. Light  
Страда́ть (*instr.*) боле́знь, иска́ть (*gen.*) обле́гченіе. Заже́чь

the candle which has gone out, and wipe the window  
свѣча́ поту́хнуть, и вы́тереть сте́кло

which is frozen. Glory to the hero who has saved his  
замёрзнуть. Сла́ва геро́й спасти́ свой

country. The roaring lion, the bellowing ox, the barking  
оте́чество. Рыка́ть левъ, мыча́ть быкъ, ла́ять

dog, the crowing cock, the cooing dove, express their  
соба́ка, пѣть пѣту́хъ, воркова́ть го́лубъ, выража́ть свой

feelings and wants.

чу́ство и жела́ніе.

The sea agitated by the winds frightens the sailors. Passive  
participles.  
Мо́ре, волнова́ть вѣтръ, устраша́ть плыве́ць.

The daughter beloved by her father, seeks to deserve his  
До́чь, любя́ть оте́ць, иска́ть заслужи́вать онъ

love. One must succour the unfortunate man, harassed  
любо́вь. До́лжно помога́ть (*dat.*) несчастный, гна́ть

by fate and pursued by disasters. This is skimmed milk,  
судьба́ и преслѣдова́ть неуда́ча. Э́тотъ сня́ть моло́ко,

and here is rappee snuff. It is a loaded gun. In the  
и вотъ терѣ́ть таба́къ. Э́тотъ заряди́ть ружьё. На (*prep.*)

market they sell killed geese, tarred ropes, little  
рыно́къ продава́ться би́ть гу́съ, смоли́ть верёвка, откорми́ть

sucking pigs, and shorn sheep.

поро́сёнокъ и стри́чь овца́.

Russia is inhabited by various nations. Good sovereigns Passive  
verbs.  
Росси́я обита́ть (*instr.*) мно́го наро́дъ. До́брый госуда́рь

are loved by their subjects and respected by their neighbours.

любя́ть свой по́дданный и уважа́ть сосе́дь.

The Tartars have been vanquished and defeated in the  
Татаринъ побѣди́ть и разби́ть на (*prep.*)



plains of Koulikof. Thy labours will be crowned with  
 поле Куликовъ. Твой трудъ увѣнчать (*instr.*)

success. Nouns are declined, and verbs conjugated. This  
 успѣхъ. Имя склонять и глаголь спрягать. Сей

great captain will be revered by posterity. Moscow  
 великій полковѣдецъ чтить въ (*prep.*) потомство. Москвѣ

has been devastated and burnt by the enemies. This gun  
 разорить и сжечь врагъ. Э тотъ ружье

is charged. This book is well bound.  
 зарядить. Э тотъ книга прекрасно переплетать.

#### THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND.

Division of  
 the adverbs.

71.—The *adverbs* (нарѣчія) are divided into different classes according to their meaning:

1. Adverbs of *quality* or *manner* (нарѣчія качествъ), e. g. такъ, *thus*; иначе, *otherwise*; хорошо, *well*; худо, *badly*; нарочно, *intentionally*; скоро, *quickly*; напрасно, *in vain*; наугадъ, *at random*; заодно, *by agreement*; по-своему, *in one's own way*, &c.

2. Adverbs of *time* (времени), e. g. вчера, *yesterday*; сегодня, *to-day*; завтра, *to-morrow*; утромъ, *in the morning*; вечеромъ, *in the evening*; нынѣ, *now*; теперъ, *at present*; тогда, *then*; послѣ, *afterwards*; прежде, *before*; иногда, *sometimes*; тотчасъ, *presently*, &c.

3. Adverbs of *place* (мѣста): *a*) such as indicate a place without motion: здѣсь, *here*; тамъ, *there*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; дома, *at home*; вездѣ, *everywhere*; *b*) such as indicate the place to which the action

is directed: *сюда, hither; туда, thither; нигуда, nowhere; домой, home; всюду, everywhere; c)* such as indicate the place whence the action proceeds; e. g. *отсюда, from here; оттуда, from there; извне, from without; снару́жи, from the exterior; отсю́ду, from all sides, &c.*

4. Adverbs of *order* (порядка); e. g. *во-пе́рвыхъ, firstly; во-вторы́хъ, secondly; потóмъ, subsequently, &c.*

5. Adverbs of *quantity* (ко́личества); e. g. *до-во́льно, enough; ма́ло, little; мно́го, much; нѣ-ско́лько, some, &c.*

6. *Implicit* (замѣні́тельные) adverbs, as: *да, yes; нѣтъ, no; мо́жь, де, says he, &c.*

7. *Interrogative* (вопро́сительныя) adverbs; e. g. *когда́, when? доко́ль, how long? гдѣ́, where (without motion)? куда́, where (with motion)? отку́да, whence? ско́лько, how much? заче́мъ, why? &c.*

72.—Adverbs are for the most part derivatives, being formed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. Nouns in the instrumental and other cases are often employed adverbially: e. g. *кру́гомъ, in a circle; верхóмъ, on horseback; да́ромъ, gratis; на показъ́, for show; въ тороп́яхъ, in haste, &c.* Every qualifying adjective, in the apocopated termination of the neuter gender, can become an adverb, as: *окра́сить бѣ́ло, синѣ́, to dye white, blue; поступа́ть хоро́шо, to conduct himself well.* The possessive and circumstantial adjectives form adverbs of manner by means of the preposition *по*, as: *по-человѣ́чьи, as a man; по-ру́сски, in Russian;*

Formation  
of the ad-  
verbs.

по-дру́жески, *as a friend*; по-звѣ́рному, *like beasts*; по-мо́ему, *according to my view*.

Degrees of  
comparison.

73.—The adverbs formed from qualifying adjectives admit of degrees of comparison; e. g. у́мно, *wisely*, and у́мнѣе, *more wisely*; хоро́шо, *well*, and лúче, *better*; по́корко, *humbly*, and всепо́корнѣйше, *very humbly*. We must here remark that the comparative of the adverbs is the same as that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination, with the exception of the five adverbs: бо́лѣе, *more*; ме́нѣе, *less*; до́лѣе, *longer*; да́лѣе, *further*; то́нѣе, *more finely*, which must be distinguished from the adjectives бо́льше, *greater*; ме́ньше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *more distant*; то́ньше, *finer*. The qualifying adverbs can also be used in the diminutive and augmentative aspects; e. g. синевáто, *bluishly*; малéнько, *a little*; пемно́жко, *not much*; похúже, *a little worse*; преу́мно, *very wisely*.

Gerunds.

74.—The *gerunds* (дѣеприча́стія) are nothing but *verbal adverbs* formed from active or neuter participles. They have two terminations in each of the two tenses, viz: *a*) in the *present*, я́ or (after a hissing letter) а, and ючи or учи, e. g. дѣ́лая and дѣ́лаяючи, *in doing*; дыша́ and ды́шючи, *in breathing*; неся́ and несúчи, *in bearing*; *b*) in the *preterit*, вѣ and вши; e. g. дѣ́лавъ and дѣ́лавши, *after having done*; проси́въ and проси́вши, *having prayed*, remarking however that verbs which have not the letter л in the preterit, have only the termination ши, e. g. уме́рши, *being dead*; поту́хши, *being*

*extinguished.* The same is the case with the pronominal verbs; e. g. *учившись, after having learned; возвратившись, having returned.*

The full terminations of the gerunds *ючи* and *вши* are more commonly employed in familiar language, while the apocopated termination *я* and *въ* are more usual in the written tongue.

### EXERCISES ON THE ADVERBS AND THE GERUNDS.

Come here, for I live here. Where is your brother? Adverbs.  
Пойти сюда, ибо я жить здѣсь. Гдѣ вашъ братъ?

He is not at home. Where did he go yesterday evening?  
Онъ нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ?

Thou judgest wisely, and thy brother judges more wisely. I  
Ты судить умно, а твой братъ . Я

walk quick, and thou walkest quicker. You speak Russian  
ходить шибко, а ты . Ты говоришь по-руски

purely, and your sister speaks it more purely. To-morrow  
чисто, а вашъ сестрица . Завтра

we shall go very far, and in a year we shall go still  
я поѣхать очень далеко, а чрезъ (*acc.*) годъ ещё

further. Thou singest well, but she sings better. I beg  
Ты пѣть хорошо, но онъ . Я просить

you very earnestly. I thank you very humbly.  
ты убѣдительно. Я благодарить ты покорно.

While walking on the bank of the river, I enjoy Gerunds.

Гулять на (*prep.*) берегъ рѣкы, я наслаждаться

the freshness of the evening. While pitying the unfortunate,  
(*instr.*) прохлада вечеръ. Жалѣть о (*prep.*) несчастный,

try to aid them. I instruct you, because I wish  
стараться помогать онъ. Я учить ты, желать

you well, and because I hope, that you will make progress  
ты (*gen.*) добрѡ, и надѣяться, что ты успѣвать

in the sciences. When thou dost not know how to do  
въ (*prep.*) наука. Не уметь дѣлать (*gen.*)

a thing, ask advice without blushing. Do right,  
что нибѣдь, просить (*gen.*) совѣтъ, не краснѣть. Дѣлать добрѡ,

without fearing any man. One must not eat when  
не бояться (*gen.*) никто. Дѣлать не ѣсть

lying down. In serving our country, and dying for  
лежать. Служить (*dat.*) отечество, и умирать за (*acc.*)

it, we do our duty. Having received your letter, and  
онъ, я исполнять свой долгъ. Получить вашъ письмѡ, и

having learned what you want, I have answered imme-  
узнать (*gen.*) что ты желать, я отвѣчать немед-

diately. After having dined, stop at home. Having  
дленно. Отобѣдать, оставаться дома. Напи-

written your letter, I placed it in an envelope, and  
сать письмѡ, положить въ (*acc.*) кувѣртъ, и

sealed it, put it in the post. Having returned  
запечатать, отдавать онъ на (*acc.*) почта. Прийти

home, I set about writing. After being married, he repaired  
домой, я съѣсть писать. Жениться, онъ поѣхать

to the country. Having remained an hour with him,  
въ (*acc.*) деревня. Просидѣть (*acc.*) часъ у (*gen.*) онъ,

I returned home; after undressing myself and going to bed,  
я пойти домой; раздѣваться и лечь,

I fell asleep immediately.

я уснуть скоро.



## THE PREPOSITION.

75.—The *prepositions* (предлоги) of the Russian language are *simple* (безъ, на, по) or *compound* (изъ-за́, изъ-пóдъ); the following is a general list of them: Division of the prepositions.

Безъ (безо), without.	Отъ (ото), from; since; out of.
Вз- or воз- (взо), up. <i>sus-</i> .	По (па-), about; until; after.
Въ (во), in, into, to, at.	Подъ (подо-), under, underneath.
Вы-, out, without, <i>ex-</i> .	Пра-, ( <i>indicating a removed relationship</i> ; пра́дѣтъ, <i>great grandfather</i> ).
Для, for.	Пре- or пере-, beyond, <i>trans-</i> ; <i>re-</i> .
До, as far as, until.	Предъ or пéредъ (предо), before.
За, behind; after; for.	При, near; in the time of.
Изъ (изо), from.	Про, of, about.
Изъ-за́, from behind.	Ра́ди, for the sake of.
Изъ-пóдъ, from under.	Раз- or р0з- (разо), apart, <i>se-</i> .
Къ (ко), to, towards; for.	Сквозъ, through.
На, on; against.	Съ (со, су-), since; about; with.
Надъ (надо), upon, over.	У, at; by, near. [ing.]
Низ- (низо-), down, <i>de-</i> .	Чрезъ or чéрезъ, through; dur-
О or объ (обо), of; round; against.	

The following adverbs also belong to the class of prepositions:

Близъ, near.	О́коло, round; about.
Вдоль, along.	О́крестъ, around.
Вмѣсто, instead of.	Опрі́чь, except, excepting.
Внутрь <i>and</i> внутри, within.	Повѣрхъ, upon, above.
Внѣ, out of, without.	Пóдлѣ, beside.
Возлѣ, beside.	Позади <i>and</i> позáдъ, behind.
Вопрекі́, against, in spite of.	Пóслѣ, after.
Крóмѣ, besides, except.	Прѣ́жде, before.
Ме́жду <i>or</i> ме́жъ, between, among.	Прóтивъ <i>or</i> протіву, against.
Мі́мо, past, by.	Сверхъ, above; besides.
Назадí, behind.	Сза́ди <i>or</i> созда́и, from behind.
Насупротівъ, opposite.	Средí <i>and</i> средъ, in the middle.

Certain adverbs, formed from qualifying adjectives, are also used as prepositions; e. g. *относительно*, *in reference to*; *касательно*, *concerning*. The same is the case with certain gerunds, as: *исключая*, *excepting*; *не смотря на*, *not withstanding*, and also some nouns in different cases, as: *въ разсужденіи*, *in consideration of*; *посредствомъ*, *by means of*, &c.

76—The prepositions in every language have a twofold use. In the first place they are used, as prefixes, in the formation of the different parts of speech, of which they become an integral part; e. g. *безуміе*, *absurdity*; *взглядъ*, *look*, *западъ*, *the west*; *обольщать*, *to seduce*; *насынокъ*, *the son-in-law*; *правнукъ*, *the great-grand-son*; *сумерки*, *twilight*; *чрезвычайный*, *extraordinary*, &c. Secondly, as particles of speech, they are placed before nouns and pronouns to indicate the relations of the objects; e. g. *человѣкъ безъ ума*, *a man without talent*; *про́сьба до судьи*, *a request to the judge*; *письмо къ другу*, *a letter to a friend*; *сказка о лисѣнцѣ*, *the tale of the fox*, &c.

These examples show that some prepositions are used conjointly and separately, while others of them can only be employed in one of these ways. Such as are only used *separately*, are: *для*, *къ* (*ко*), *ради*, *сквозь*, *изъ-за́* and *изъ-подъ*. Such as are only used *conjointly*, are: *въ* (*воз*, *взо*), *вы*, *низ* (*низо*), *на*, *пра*, *пре* (*пере*), *раз* (*роз*, *разо*) and *съ*, and for this reason are called *inseparable* prepositions. All the other prepositions may be used both conjointly and separately.

77.—The separable prepositions require the complementary word to be put in a certain case. Thus: Government of the prepositions.

Безъ, для, до, изъ, изъ-за, изъ-подъ, отъ, ради and у, as well as almost all the adverbs used prepositionally, require the *genitive*.

Къ and the adverb вопреки require the *dative*.

Про, сквозь and чрезъ govern the *accusative*.

Надъ requires the *instrumental*, as does also the adverb между or межъ, though used occasionally with the *genitive*.

При governs the *prepositional*.

За, подъ and предъ require the *accusative*, when they indicate motion towards an object, and the *instrumental* when they design repose.

Въ, на and о or объ govern the *accusative*, when they indicate a change of place, and the *prepositional*, when there is no motion indicated from one place to another.

Съ governs the *genitive*, the *accusative* and the *instrumental*. With the *genitive* it means *from*, *since*; with the *accusative*, *as*, *about*, *of the size of*, and with the *instrumental*, *with*.

По requires the *dative*, the *accusative* and the *prepositional*. With the *dative* it signifies *about*; with the *accusative*, *as far as*, and with the *prepositional*, *after*.

#### EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

Without hope it is impossible to live in the world. From  
 Безъ надежда нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ  
 the river to the forest there are two versts. Of what are you  
 рѣка до лѣсъ (есть) два верста. О что ты

talking? We labour for the public good. Between the  
говори́ть? Я труди́ться для о́бщій блага́. Ме́жду

house and the garden there is a large court with stables.  
до́мъ и са́дъ (*есть*) про́странный дво́рь съ коню́шня.

For God's sake do not grieve. The love of the sovereign  
Ради́ Богъ не уныва́ть. Любо́вь къ госуда́рь

and of one's native land. He lives at his uncle. The soldier  
и о́течество. Онъ жи́ть у сво́ей дядя́. Солда́тъ

started from behind the bush. The ray of the sun passes  
вы́скочить изъ-за́ ку́стъ. Лучъ со́лнечный про́никать

through the water. This man is at death's door.  
сквозь вода́. Э́тотъ чело́вѣкъ (*есть*) при сме́рти.

The bird flies under the clouds. I have put the book under  
Пти́ца лета́ть подъ о́блако. Я положи́ть кни́га подъ

the table. Sit down to table and remain at table. My  
сто́лъ. Саді́ться за сто́лъ и сидѣ́ть за сто́лъ. Мой

brother starts for Moscow, because his wife lives at  
братъ ѣ́хать въ Москв́а, пото́му что онъ жена́ жи́ть въ

Moscow. The eagle is perched on the tree. This glass  
Москв́а. Орёлъ сидѣ́тъ на де́рево. Э́тотъ рю́мка

has been broken into several pieces. I am angry with my  
разби́ваться на ме́лкій ча́сть. Я доса́довать на мой

brother for his laziness. Never mind the affairs of others.  
братъ за онъ ле́ность. Не забо́титься о де́ло чужо́й.

My friend has wounded himself against the corner of the table.  
Мой дру́гъ ушиба́ться объ у́голъ сто́лъ.

The water runs from the roof. Here are trees with leaves,  
Вода́ течётъ съ кро́вля. Вотъ де́рево съ листь,

but without blossoms. This dog will be of the size of  
но безъ цвѣ́тъ. Э́тотъ соба́ка бы́ть съ

a cow. The children run about the court and about the  
коро́ва. Дѣ́тя бѣ́гать по дво́рь и по

garden. We worked from the first to the fifth of August.  
садъ. Я рабѣть отъ первыи по пятый число А́вгустъ.

He wears mourning for his brother.  
Онъ носить трауръ по свой братъ.

## THE CONJUNCTION.

78.—The following is a general list of the Russian *conjunctions* (союзы).

А, and; but.	Не только . . . но, и, not only
Буде, if, provided.	. . . . but even.
Будто, будто бы, that, as if.	Нежели, than.
Впроче́мъ, as for the rest.	Ни, ни́жé, neither, nor; not
Да, and, but; let.	Но, but. [even.
Дабы́, that, in order that.	Одна́ко, however.
Для того́ что, because.	Посему́, then.
Ежели <i>and</i> е́сли, if, in case,	Потому́ что, because.
when.	Пра́вда, it is true.
Же <i>or</i> жъ, then, also.	Пу́скай <i>or</i> пусть, let.
И, and; also, too.	Ско́ль ни, whatever.
Ибо́, because.	Слѣдовательно, consequently,
Или́ <i>or</i> иль, or.	То, then. [then.
И такъ, therefore.	Того́ ра́ди, therefore.
Какъ, as, when.	То́лько <i>and</i> то́кмо, only, merely.
Ка́къ-то, for instance.	Хотя́, though, although.
Когда́, when, whenever.	Хотя́ бы, even though.
Ли́ <i>or</i> ль ( <i>interrogative</i> ); if,	Что, that.
whether.	Чтобы́ <i>or</i> что́бъ, that, in order
Ли́бо, either, or.	that.
Ли́шь, just, as soon as.	Чѣ́мъ, than.

There are other parts of speech which perform the office of conjunctions; such are the relative pronouns: кто, что, кото́рый, кой, *who, which*; чей, *whose*; како́й, *which*; the interrogative adverbs: гдѣ, куда́, *where*; отку́да, *whence*; доко́ль, *how long*; ско́лько, ско́ль, *how much*; and others: такъ,



*thus; пока́, as much as; тѣмъ . . . чѣмъ, so much the more . . . that; чѣмъ . . . . тѣмъ, the more . . . the more; ча́стію, in part, &c.*

### EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

My uncle was born and lived at Moscow, and not at Tver.

Мой дѣдя родиться и жить въ Москвѣ, а не въ Тверь.

Do you know that our tutor is indisposed? If you do  
Знать ли что нашъ учитель нездоровый? Ежели ты

not come I shall be angry. Ask him if he  
не пріѣзжать, то я осердѣться. Спросить у онъ, ли онъ

will come, or if he has the intention to stop at home. Не  
хотѣтъ ѣхать, или вознамѣрится оставаться дома. Онъ

distresses himself more about his brother than about his sister.

забѣдниться болѣе о брать, нежели о сестра.

It is more agreeable to do good to others, than to receive

Пріятно дѣлать добро другой, чѣмъ получать

benefits one's self. Let him come; let them go.

благотвореніе самъ. Пусть онъ прійти; пускай онъ уѣхать.

Do not let the sun find you on your bed. Long live

Не да солнце заставать ты на ложе. Да здравствовать

the Tzar. The more thou learnest diligently, the more study will

Царь. Чѣмъ ты учишься прилѣжно, тѣмъ ученіе быть

be easy to thee.

лёгкій для ты.

### THE INTERJECTION.

79.—The principal *interjections* (междомѣтія) of the Russian language are the following: ура! ра! expressing *joy*; ахъ! охъ! увы! ахтѣ! expressive of *pain*; ай! ухъ! ой! indicate *fear*; тѣу! indicates *aversion*; уфъ! expresses *fatigue*; ну! нѣже! are used to *encourage*; стъ! тсъ! to impose *silence*; эй! рей! to *call*.

## SECOND PART

## SYNTAX.

80.—*Syntax*, which treats of the union of the different elements of speech, and of the order in which those different elements ought to be arranged, is divided into three parts: 1) the *concord* of words (согласованіе), or the syntax of agreement, which teaches how to express the union existing between the words forming the proposition; 2) the *dependence* of words (управленіе), or the syntax of government, which teaches the manner of indicating the relation existing between a term and its antecedent; and 3) the *construction* of words (размѣщеніе), or the place to be assigned to the single words in the proposition, and to the propositions in the period.

Division of  
Syntax.

## CONCORD OF WORDS.

81.—The following are the rules of the concord of words in the Russian language:

1. The *subject* (подлежащее), *attribute* (сказуемое) and *copula* (связка) must agree in gender, number and person; e. g. Ботъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; науки (суть) полезны, *the sciences are useful*; Москвѣ была слава, *Moscow has been celebrated*; Азія будетъ спокойна, *Asia will be tranquil*; солнце взошло, *the sun has risen*. — When the attribute is a noun, it retains its gender and number; as: орёлъ есть хищная птица, *the eagle*

*is a bird of prey*; but the movable nouns agree with the subject; as: лунá есть спутница землi, *the moon is the satellite of the earth*.

To this rule there are the following exceptions: 1) The personal pronoun of the 2d person, with its determinatives, as also the verb and the attribute when an adjective is used, from politeness, in the *plural* instead of the singular; but when the attribute is a noun, it remains in the singular; e. g. вы самн, другъ мой, нездоровы, *you yourself, my friend, are indisposed*; будьте свидѣтелямъ, *be a witness*. — 2) The verb *быть*, in the sense of *exist*, though the subject be plural, remains in the *singular* in the 3d person of the present; but in the preterit and future it agrees in number with its subject; e. g. у него есть деньги, *he has money*; у него были деньги, *he had money*; у него будутъ деньги, *he will have money*. — 2) In the case of nouns indicating a title, the verb and the attribute agree in gender with the sex of the person who bears the title; as: Его Величество (Король) нездоровъ, *His Majesty (the King) is indisposed*; Ея Сiятельство (Графиня) была здѣсь, *Her Excellency (the Countess) has been here*; Его Свѣтлость (Князь) прогуливался, *His Highness (the Prince) has taken a walk*.

2. Determinative words agree with the noun they determine, in *gender, number and case*; e. g. Великій Петръ преобразовалъ обширную Россiю, *Peter the Great has regenerated the vast Russian empire*. If the determinative is a noun, it only agrees in *case*; e. g. слѣзы, утѣшенiе несчастныхъ, у него изсякли, *tears, the consolation of the unhappy, were dried up within him*.

3. Two or more subjects in the singular require the verb and the attribute in the *plural*; e. g. лѣньность и прѣздность (суть) вредны, *laziness and inactivity are pernicious*. If the two nouns in the singular are united by an alternative conjunction,

the verb and the attribute must be in the *singular*; e. g. зима́ или́ весна́ тебѣ́ прі́ятна? *is it winter or spring that is agreeable to thee?*

4. The infinitive, when it performs the office of subject, requires the verb and the attribute to be put in the *neuter singular*; this is also the case with the adverbs много́, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; ско́лько, *how much*; нѣско́лько, *some*; e. g. уми́ра́тъ за о́течество (есть) сла́вно и прі́ятно, *it is noble and pleasant to die for one's country*; ско́лько при́шло се́мействъ, *how many families have arrived?*

5. When two nouns, the one appellative and the other proper, both relating to the same object, differ in number or gender, the adjective or verb agrees with the *appellative* noun; e. g. дре́вній го́родъ О́ивы, *the ancient city of Thebes*; сла́вная рѣ́ка Дуна́й, *the celebrated river Danube*. When there are two nouns of different genders, the adjective agrees with the *masculine*; e. g. сла́вные ца́ри и ца́рицы, *the celebrated kings and queens*. In the verbs the first person has the priority over the two others, and the second over the third; as: ты и я гу́ляемъ вмѣ́стѣ, *thou and I walk together*; ты и онъ не зна́ете что дѣ́лать, *thou and he know not what to do*.

6. The numerals compounded of оди́нъ, *one*, require the noun in the *singular* (§ 43); e. g. двáдцать оди́нъ ру́бль, *twenty one rubles*; ты́сяча одна́ ночь, *the thousand and one nights*.

7. The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the noun to which they relate, but they take the *case* that the verb of the phrase in which

they occur, may require; e. g. я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите, *I know the affair of which you speak*. The pronoun *чей*, occurring always with a noun, must agree in every respect with that noun; e. g. тотъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба, *he in whose hands is my destiny*.

### EXERCISES ON THE CONCORD OF WORDS.

Winter is agreeable. Men are mortal. Novgorod was  
 Зимá пріятный. Человѣкъ смѣртный. Нѡвгородъ быть  
 rich. Russia is a vast empire. The Wolga is the king  
 богатый. Россія быть обширный имперія. Вѡлга быть царь  
 of the rivers of Russia. My friend, you shall be satisfied.  
 рѣкá русскій. Мой пріятель, ты быть довольный.  
 We have great stores. I shall have to-morrow some  
 У я быть большой запасъ. У я быть завтра  
 money. Her Majesty (*the Empress*) is gone out. His  
 дѣньги. Онъ Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхать. Онъ

Excellency (*the general*) is gone. His Imperial  
 Превосходительство (*генерáлъ*) уѣхать. Онъ Имперáторскій  
 Highness (*the Grand-Duke*) has been satisfied. Geography  
 Высочество (*Велікій Князь*) быть довольный. Географія  
 and history are very useful branches of knowledge.  
 и исторія быть весьма полезный знáніе.

It is difficult to be silent. How many children were there?  
 Трудный молчать. Ско́лько дитя быть тамъ?

Moscow is celebrated; the town of Moscow is celebrated.  
 Москвá знаменитый; гóродъ

China is densely peopled; the empire of China is densely  
 Кнѣтай многолюдный; госудáрство



peopled. He has thirty one horses. The book  
 У ОНЪ БЫТЬ ТРИДЦАТЬ ОДИНЪ ЛОШАДЬ. Книга,  
 which you are reading, is very amusing. Here is  
 КОТОРЫЙ ТЫ ЧИТАТЬ, ОЧЕНЬ ЗАБАВНЫЙ. Вотъ  
 the man by whose works we profit.  
 ЧЕЛОВѢКЪ, (*instr.*) ЧЕЙ ТРУДЪ ПОЛЬЗОВАТЬСЯ.

## DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

82.—For the *dependence* or government of words in Russian the following rules are to be observed:

1. Words which, having the same root, appear in the form of substantive, adjective or adverb, as also in the form of verb, participle or gerund, require the same cases; e. g. вредить ближнему, *to do harm to his neighbour*; вредящій ближнему, *doing harm to his neighbour*; вредя ближнему, *in doing harm to his neighbour*; вредъ ближнему, *the harm done to his neighbour*; вредный ближнему, *prejudicial to his neighbour*; вредно ближнему, *prejudicially to his neighbour*.

2. The governing power of the verbs depends on their meaning: the same verb used in different significations requires different cases; e. g. говорить правду, *to speak the truth*; говорить о дѣлѣ, *to speak of an affair*; говорить языкомъ, *to speak a language*; говорить съ другомъ, *to speak with a friend*; отказать просителю, *to refuse a petitioner*; отказать въ просьбѣ, *to refuse a request*; отказать домъ, *to bequeath a house*; отказать отъ должности, *to deprive of an office*.

3. The prepositions communicate to the verbs to which they are joined a double quality. In the first place they express simply the commencement of the action, its duration and its completion; as: игралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he played on the flute*; заигралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he began to play on the flute*; поигравъ на флѣйтѣ, занялся онъ чтеніемъ, *after having played a little on the flute, he busied himself with reading*; вчера сыгралъ на флѣйтѣ претрудное сочиненіе, *yesterday he played on the flute a very difficult composition*; онъ доигралъ на флѣйтѣ начатое на скрипкѣ,

he finished playing on the flute what he had begun on the violin; *отыгралъ на флѣйтѣ въ полночь*, he ceased playing on the flute at midnight. Secondly the preposition gives to the verb another meaning; e. g. *писать писмó*, to write a letter; *восписать хвалу*, to confer praises upon; *вписать въ книгу*, to inscribe in the book; *выписать изъ книги*, to extract from a book; *записать въ службу*, to enter on the service; *написать адресъ*, to write an address; *отписать къ другу*, to inform a friend; *переписать нáбѣло*, to make a fair copy; *приписать стрóчку*, to add a line; *описать всю службу*, to describe the whole service; *расписать комнату*, to paint a room; *списаться съ пріятелемъ*, to correspond with a friend. The prepositional verbs of the first mentioned class require after them the same *preposition* and the same *case* as in the simple form, while those of the second category, in which the addition of a preposition modifies the sense, take after them the preposition with which they are formed, or a corresponding one, as is seen below.

Verbs formed with the preposition require after them the preposition	воз or въ,	на; e. g. . . <i>взойти на гору</i> , to ascend the mountain.
	в or во,	въ; . . . <i>вступать въ домъ</i> , to enter in the house.
	вы, . .	изъ; . . . <i>выйти изъ лѣсу</i> , to issue from the forest.
	до, . .	до; . . . <i>доѣхать до города</i> , to go as far as the town.
	за, . .	за; . . . <i>закинуть за спину</i> , to throw behind one's self.
	из, . .	изъ; . . . <i>извлечь изъ книги</i> , to extract from a book.
	на, . .	на; . . . <i>навьючить на лошадь</i> , to place upon a horse.
	над, . .	надъ; . . . <i>надсматривать надъ дѣтми</i> , to watch over the children.
	низ, . .	съ; . . . <i>низлетѣть съ кровли</i> , to fly down from the roof.
	от, . .	отъ; . . . <i>оторвать отъ работы</i> , to tear from labour.
	пере, . .	черезъ; . . . <i>перескочить черезъ ровъ</i> , to leap across a ditch.
	под, . .	подъ; . . . <i>подложить подъ голову</i> , to put under his head.
	пред, . .	предъ; . . . <i>предстать предъ судьей</i> , to present himself before the judges.
	при, . .	къ; . . . <i>прійти къ другу</i> , to come to a friend.
	про, . .	сквозь; . . . <i>пройти сквозь огонь</i> , to pass through the fire.
	провз, .	отъ; . . . <i>произойти отъ болѣзни</i> , to arise from a disease.
	раз, . .	на; . . . <i>разрѣзать на части</i> , to cut into pieces.
	с or со,	съ; . . . <i>скинуть съ себя</i> , to throw off one's self.

83.—We now give the application of these rules in every case, with the exceptions thereto.

Nominative. In the *nominative* are put: 1) The subject, or the principal member of the proposition; as: *солнце свѣтитъ*, the sun shines; *море шумитъ*, the sea

roars. (The subject with a negative verb is sometimes put in the *genitive*; see below.)—2) The attribute, united to the subject by means of the verb *есть*, *былъ* or *буду*, when it expresses a permanent quality of the subject; as: орёлъ есть птица, *the eagle is a bird*; Адамъ былъ человѣкъ, *Adam was a man*. The adjective in this occasion is used in the apocopated termination; as: Богъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; Славяне были храбры, *the Slavonians were brave*. If the attribute does not express some permanent quality of the subject, but only a transitory one and of short duration, it is then put in the *instrumental*; as: мой братъ былъ въ то время кадѣтомъ, *my brother was at that time a cadet*; онъ скоро будетъ генераломъ, *he will soon be a general*. This exception however occurs only with the preterit and the future, never with the present.

In the *vocative* is put the name or denomination of the person addressed; e. g. Бóже, спаси Царя! *God, save the Tzar!* Господи, помилуй меня! *Lord, have mercy upon me!* Vocative.

The *accusative* is used: 1) After the active verbs; as: птица пьётъ воду, *the bird drinks the water*; я погасилъ свѣчу, *I have put out the candle*; мой сосѣдъ купилъ домъ, *my neighbour has bought a house*. The verbal nouns, formed from these verbs, require the *genitive*; as: питьё воды, *the drinking of the water*; погашеніе свѣчѣ, *the putting out of the candle*; покупка дома, *the purchase of a house*. —2) To indicate the duration of an action for a given time or over a given distance; as: я писалъ

всю ночь, *I have written the whole night*; онъ про́бхаль версту́, *he has run a verst.*—3) After the prepositions *въ, на, за, подъ, предъ, про, сквозь, чрезъ, о* or *объ, по* and *съ* (§ 77).

**Dative.** The *dative* is used: 1) With the accusative, to indicate the person to whose gain or loss the action is performed; e. g. ты по́далъ мѣлостыню́ бѣ́дному, *thou hast given alms to the poor man.*—2) After the verbs formed with the prepositions *предъ* and *со* (in a sense of reciprocity), or with the adverbs *бл́го, прѣ́мвз* and *прѣ́ко*; as: ѳ́сень прѣдшѣ́ствуетъ зимѣ́, *autumn precedes winter*; не прѣкослѣ́вь ста́ршимъ, *do not contradict the aged.*—3) After the verbs expressing command or prohibition, pleasure or grief, compliance or opposition, assistance or obstacle; e. g. мы подража́емъ дрѣ́внимъ, *we imitate the ancients*; не льсти́ богаты́мъ, *do not flatter the rich*; служи́ усѣ́рдно Госудáрю, *serve the sovereign with zeal.* The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the dative; as: подража́нiе дрѣ́внимъ, *the imitation of the ancients*; лести́ богаты́мъ, *flattery to the rich.*—4) After such verbs as are used in the infinitive instead of the future; as: бы́ть бѣ́дѣ́, *there will be a misfortune*; не ви́даты́ намъ́ ясныхъ́ дней́, *we shall see no more fine days.*—5) With the impersonal verbs; as: мнѣ́ хѳ́чется ѣ́сть, *I want to eat*; вамъ́ нездорѳ́вится, *you are indisposed.*—6) With such adjectives and adverbs as are derived from the above mentioned verbs, or which express advantage or detriment, utility or uselessness, pleasure or dislike; e. g. прíятный́ слýху, *agreeable to the ear*; жи́ть при-



лично своему состоянию, *to live suitably to one's condition.*—7) After the prepositions *кз* and *по*, and the adverb *вопреки* (§ 77).

The *instrumental* is used: 1) With the active, neuter, pronominal and passive verbs, *a*) to designate the instrument, the means by which the action is performed; as: онъ берётъ книгу рука́ми, *he takes the book with the hands*; я моюсь водо́ю, *I wash myself with water*; книга написа́на моимъ учи́телемъ, *the book has been written by my master*; *b*) to designate the name, surname or quality given to an object; as: его́ зову́тъ Ива́номъ, *they call him John*; тебя́ счита́ютъ умнымъ, *you are considered intelligent*. Some active verbs expressing motion, which usually govern the accusative, are also found with the instrumental; as: броса́ть ка́мень and броса́ть ка́мнемъ, *to throw a stone*; дви́гать се́рдца́ and се́рдца́ми, *to move the hearts*.—2) With the verb *быть* and *быва́ть*, to designate a quality; as: онъ хо́четъ бы́ть люби́мымъ, *he desires to be loved*; не быва́ть тебѣ́ вои́номъ, *thou wilt not be a warrior*. (See above the nominative).—3) After such verbs as indicate contempt, indignation, esteem, possession, sacrifice, &c.; as: пренебрега́ть опа́сностью, *to despise danger*; владе́ть имѣ́ниемъ, *to possess a property*; жертвовать собо́ю, *to sacrifice one's self*. The verbal nouns formed from such verbs also require the instrumental; as: пренебреже́ние опа́сностью, *the contempt of danger*; владе́ние имѣ́ниемъ, *the possession of a property*.—4) To designate that part of an object which is distinguished by some particular quality; as: лице́мъ



бѣлъ, *white in the face*; широкъ плечами, *broad in the shoulders*.—5) To indicate the road an object takes; and also to designate the seasons and the parts of the day; as: плыть моремъ, *to go by sea*; весною сѣютъ, *one sows in spring*; ночью спятъ, *one sleeps at night*.—6) After the prepositions за, надъ, подъ, предъ, съ, and the adverb между or межъ (§ 77).

Genitive. The *genitive* is used: 1) With nouns to indicate that one object is the property of another, and also its origin, &c.; as: хозяинъ дома, *the master of the house*; домъ сосѣда, *the house of the neighbour*; сынъ солдата, *the son of a soldier*. The complementary noun in such occasions may be converted into a possessive adjective; as: домовый хозяинъ, сосѣдний домъ, солдатскій сынъ. The dative may sometimes be substituted for this genitive; as: другъ брату, *the friend of the brother*; цѣна мѣстамъ, *the price of the places*. A noun with a qualifying adjective indicates in the genitive the quality of the object in a higher degree; as: чай лучшаго сорта, *a tea of superior quality*; человекъ строгихъ правилъ, *a man of rigid principles*.—2) With the verbal nouns, formed from active verbs governing the accusative; e. g. чтѣнiе книги, *the reading of a book*; знанiе дѣла, *the knowledge of an affair*.—3) To designate number, weight, measure, and in general after adverbs of quantity; as: пудъ сѣна, *a pood of hay*; аршинъ сукна, *an ell of cloth*; нѣсколько книгъ, *some books*.—4) To designate the years, the months and the day of the month; as: шестого января тысяча восемьсотъ

четырнадцатого года, *January 6th 1814.*—5) After active verbs preceded by the negative adverb *не*, and with the impersonal negative verbs *нѣтъ*, *не стало*, *не слышно*, *не имѣется*, and others indicating privation; e. g. *не люблю невѣжды*, *I do not like the ignorant*; *не вижу пользы*, *I do not see the advantage*; *у насъ нѣтъ хлѣба*, *we have no bread*; *когда меня не будетъ*, *when I shall be no more*; *не видно переменъ*, *one sees no change.*—6) With the active verbs, when the action extends only to a part of the object, or lasts only a limited time; e. g. *принеси воды*, *bring me some water*; *дай мнѣ перо*, *give me your pen for a little while.* The same is the case with some verbs formed with the prepositions *на* and *по*, as: *пойдти рыбы*, *to catch some fish*; *покосить травы*, *to mow some grass.*—7) With such active and pronominal verbs as express desire, expectation, disobedience, fear, privation, &c.; e. g. *желаемъ счастья*, *we desire health*; *онъ ждетъ разсвѣта*, *he awaits daybreak*; *бояться дневнаго свѣта*, *to fear the light of day*; *держаться правилъ чести*, *to keep to principles of honour.* The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the genitive; as: *желаніе славы*, *the desire of glory*; *лишеніе имѣнія*, *the loss of a property.*—8) After the adjectives *достойный*, *worthy*; *полный*, *full*; *чуждый*, *a stranger to*; and the adverb *жаль*, *it is a pity*; e. g. *я чуждъ сего мнѣнія*, *I am a stranger to this opinion*; *жаль ему брата*, *he is sorry for his brother.*—9) After adjectives and adverbs in the comparative, when not followed by a conjunction; e. g. *сокровища драгоцннѣйшія*

зѡлота, *treasures more precious than gold*; слонѣ выше верблюда, *the elephant is larger than the camel*; онѣ жилѣ долѣе всѣхѣ, *he has lived longer than all*.—10) After the prepositions безѣ, для, до, изѣ, изѣ-за, изѣ-подѣ, отѣ, рѣди, съ and у, as also after most of the adverbs used as prepositions (§ 77), remarking that the prepositions для and рѣди are sometimes placed after their complement; as: для Бѡга and Бѡга для, *for God's sake*; рѣди чѣсти and чѣсти рѣди, *for honour*.

Lastly the *genitive* is used with the numerals. See the particular rules relative to the numerals § 43.

Preposi-  
tional.

The *prepositional* case is only used with the prepositions въ, на, о or обѣ, no and при (§ 77).

#### EXERCISES ON THE DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

Nominative. Water is an element. Alexander of Macedon was a great captain. The Tatars were ferocious. My grand-father полковѡдецѣ. Татѣринѣ бытѣ свирѣпый. Мой дѣдѣ

was an officer; my grand-father was then an officer. It is said бытѣ офицѣръ; тогда . Говорѣтъ that the comets have been or will be once planets. что комѣта бытѣ или бытѣ ещѣ планѣта.

Accusative. The rain refreshes the earth. Rogues hate honest Дѡждѣ освѣжѣтъ землѣ. Злѡдѣй ненавидѣтъ чѣстный men. The storm which devastated our fields, has ruined люди. Бурѣ, опустѡшѣтъ нашѣ полѣ, разорѣтъ many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has многѣе поселянинѣ. Говорѣтъ всегда правѣда. Мой братѣ бытѣ

been sick all winter. I have been a whole verst on horseback.  
 больной весь зима. Я ѣхать цѣлый верста верхомъ.

Thou art praised for thy assiduity. He struck himself against  
 Ты хвалить за прилежаніе. Онъ удариться объ  
 the wall. We are in the water up to the neck. The son  
 стѣна. Я сидѣть въ вода по шея. Сынъ

is the size of the father, and the daughter almost the size of  
 ростъ съ отецъ, и дочь почти съ  
 the mother.

мать.

The miser prefers money to glory, and the warrior Dative.

Скупецъ предпочитать деньги слава, и воинъ

prefers glory to money. The lightning precedes the  
 слава деньги. Молнія предшествовать

thunder. I admire your patience. Do these pictures  
 громъ. Дивиться вашъ терпѣніе. Этотъ картина

please you? Do not avenge thyself on thy enemy,  
 нравиться ли ты? Не мстить твой непріятель,

and do good to him who has offended thee. There will  
 и дѣлать добро обижать ты. Быть

be a prodigy. Bitter tears will be shed. The child wishes  
 чудо. Горькій слеза литься. Ребенокъ хотѣться

to drink. It is not proper for a strong man to offend  
 пить. Не приличнѣй сильный человекъ обижать

the weak. The imitation of Jesus Christ. The love of  
 слабый. Подражаніе Иисусъ Христосъ. Любовь къ

virtue and the hatred of vice.

добродѣтель и ненависть къ пороку.

I see with the eyes, I touch with the hands, I hear with Instru-  
 Видѣть глазъ, осязать рука, слышать mental.

the ears, I smell with the nose, I taste with the tongue.  
 ухо, обонять носъ, вкушать языкъ.



Ismail was taken by Souvorof, and Otchakow by Potemkin.  
Измайлъ взятъ Суворовъ, и Очаковъ Потёмкинъ.

Every body calls these officers heroes. The patient moves  
Весь называть этотъ офицеръ герой. Больной шевелить  
scarcely the lips. I detest fraud and falsehood. Here  
едва губа. Гнушаться обманъ и ложь. Здѣсь

one breathes a pure air. The sacrifice of one's life for  
дышать чистый воздухъ. Пожертвованіе жизнь за

his sovereign and country. He is kind in heart, but weak  
Государь и отечество. Онъ добрый сердце, но слабый

in head. One must rise in the morning, work during  
голова. Надобно вставать утро, работать

the day, rest in the evening and sleep during the night.  
день, отдыхать вечеръ, и спать ночь.

Reconcile my friend with his uncle. I congratulate you on  
Помирить мой другъ съ онъ дядя. Поздравлять ты съ  
your success.  
вашъ успѣхъ.

Genitive. The son of my faithful friend departed yesterday. Quick-  
Сынъ мой искренній другъ уѣзжать вчера. Большой

witted children are often delicate. There has been made  
умъ дитя бывать нерѣдко хилый. Составлять

a list of the officers of our division. The baking of bread.  
списокъ офицеръ нашъ дивизія. Печеніе хлѣбъ.

I have bought a pound of tea and a cord of wood. Such  
Я купить фунтъ чай и сажень дрова. Столько

labour and pains have been lost uselessly. The Russians  
трудъ и забота пропадать по-пустому. Русскій

took Paris March 18th 1814. I do not eat bread, but  
брать Парижъ мартъ 18 1814. Я не ѣсть хлѣбъ, но

I drink water. I eat the bread, but I do not drink the water.  
пить вода. Я ѣсть хлѣбъ, но не пить вода.



I have received neither letter nor packet. In this letter there  
Я получа́ть не ни письмо́, ни посы́лка. Въ э́тотъ письмо́ нѣтъ  
is not a fault. Procure me money. The warriors wish

ни оди́нь оши́бка. Достава́ть я де́ньги. Вои́нь жела́ть  
for the battle and seek glory. The ambitious man thirsts for  
бѣ́тва и иска́ть сла́ва. Славолю́бець жа́ждать

honours. Thou desirest riches, and thou fearest labour.  
по́честъ. Ты хоте́ть бога́тство, и бо́аться тру́дь.

The barrel is full of wine. A worthy man is a stranger to hatred  
Ба́чка по́лный вино́. Добра́й челове́къ чу́ждый злоба́

and envy. Gold is dearer than silver; lead is heavier  
и за́вистъ. Зо́лото доро́гой серебро́; свине́ць тяжё́лый  
than iron. He asks alms for Christ's sake. Rest is  
же́лѣзо. Онъ проси́ть ми́лостыня́ Христо́съ ра́ди. О́тдыхъ

agreeable after labour. Along this shore runs a chain  
прі́ятный по́слъ рабо́та. Вдо́ль э́тотъ бе́регъ тяну́ться це́пь  
of mountains. The wolves prowl round the villages.  
гора́. Волкы́ броди́ть о́коло дере́вня.

My brother preserves his presence of mind in all the troubles  
Мой бра́тъ храні́ть прису́тствіе ду́хъ при все́ Preposi-  
tional.  
of life. This town is built on the precipitous  
пепрі́ятность въ жи́знь. Сей го́родъ постро́ить на круто́й

bank of a rapid river. A church with five cupolas. He  
бе́регъ бы́стрый рѣ́ка. Це́рковь о́ пять гла́ва. Онъ  
weeps over his father.  
пла́кать по́ свой о́тець.

### THE FAIRY. Во́лше́бни́ца.

The differ-  
ent rules of  
Syntax.

A widow had two daughters: the elder resembled  
Оди́нь вдова́ имѣ́ть два́ дочь: ста́рый бы́ть похо́жий на  
her mother both in face and temper, that is to say, she was  
свой ма́ть и ли́цѣ и нра́въ, то е́сть, онъ бы́ть

as ugly and as malicious as her mother. Nobody такъ же дурной и такъ же злой, какъ онъ мать. Никто loved them; every one avoided them. The younger was не любить онъ; весь бѣгать отъ онъ. Малый же быть beautiful and good. Every one loved her. But her прекрасный и добродушный. Весь любить онъ. Но онъ malicious mother and her wicked sister detested her; злый мать и злый сестра ненавидеть онъ; they scolded her without ceasing; she alone was obliged бранить безпрестанно; онъ одинъ быть должный to work in the house, to heat the stove, to sweep the rooms, работать въ домъ, топить печь, мести горница, to cook. The poor child wept from morning till стрѣпать въ кухня. Бѣдияжка плакать съ утро до night, but she was not lazy at her work; she was вѣчеръ, но онъ не лѣниться работать; быть obedient, patient, and all that was in vain, for послушный, терпѣливый, и весь этотъ быть напрасный, ибо she could in no way satisfy her wicked mother and мочь не ничто угодать на свой злой мать и на her wicked sister. свой злой сестра.

Every day this poor girl was forced to go with Ежедневно этотъ бѣдный дѣвушка быть должный ходить съ a large pitcher to fetch water in a neighbouring wood, большой кувшинъ за вода въ ближний роща, where there was a clear spring. One day she въ который находится чистый источникъ. Однажды онъ had gone according to custom to this spring. The day пойти по обыкновеніе къ этотъ источникъ. День was very hot. After having filled her pitcher with water, быть очень жаркій. Наполнять кувшинъ вода,

she returned home. All at once she saw before her  
 онъ возвращаться домой. Вдругъ видѣть предъ себя  
 an old woman. "My child!" said to her the old woman,  
 старушка. «Мой дитя!» скáзывать онъ старушка,  
 "give me water to drink; I am wearied; I am very hot." —  
 «давáть я напивáться; я уставáть; я (*быть*) жаркíй.» —  
 "With pleasure, good mother", said the young girl, "here  
 «Съ охóта, бабушка», скáзывать дѣвушка, «вотъ!  
 drink." And she presented the pitcher to the poor woman.  
 напивáться.» И онъ подавáть кувшинъ старушка.

The old woman sat down on the grass from weariness, and  
 Старушка садíться на травá отъ слабóсть, а  
 the young girl kneeled down before her, and  
 молодóй красáвица становíться на колѣно перéдъ онъ, и

held gently the pitcher, while she drank.  
 поддѣрживать остóрожно кувшинъ, покá онъ пить водá.

"I thank thee, my dear!" said the old woman after  
 «Благодарíть ты, милый!» скáзывать старушка,

having drunk. "I see that thou art a good, an amiable  
 напивáться. «Видѣть, что ты (*есть*) дóбрый, лáсковый

child, and I wish to reward thee for thy kindness.  
 дитя, и хотѣть награждáть ты за твой услóужливóсть.

Know then that I am a fairy, and that I took pur-  
 Знать же, я волшѣбница, и взять на себя на-  
 posely the form of an old woman to put thee to the proof.  
 рóчно видѣ старушка, чтобы ты испы́тывать.

I am delighted that thou art so good, and this is what  
 Рáдоваться, что ты (*есть*) такой дóбрый, и вотъ, что

I will do for thee: every time that thou shalt pronounce  
 хотѣть сдѣлать для ты: всякíй разъ, что ты скáзывать

a word, there shall issue from thy mouth either a pretty  
 слóво, выпадáть изъ у ты ротъ или прекрáсный

flower, or a precious stone, or a large pearl.  
цвѣтокъ, или драгоцѣнный камень, или большой жемчужина.

Farewell, my little friend." And the fairy disappeared.  
Прости, дружокъ.» И волшебница исчезать.

The pretty girl returned home. "Where hast  
Прекрасный дѣвушка возвращаться домой. «Гдѣ  
thou been so long", asked her mother with ill  
ты быть такъ долго», спрашивать у онъ мать съ  
humour? — "What hast thou been doing so long in the wood?"  
сѣрдце? — «Что ты дѣлать такъ долго въ роща?»,  
cried her wicked sister. — "I beg pardon! I lingered by the  
закричать злой сестра. — «Виноватый! замѣшкаться,  
way", replied the poor child, and at the same instant  
отвѣчать бѣдняжка, и въ тотъ самый минута  
there issued from her pretty lips two roses, two pearls,  
скатываться изъ онъ прекрасный губа два роза, два жемчужина  
and two large emeralds. "What do I see?" exclaimed  
и два большой изумрудъ. «Что я видѣть?» восклицать  
the mother astonished. "These are flowers! these are precious  
мать удивленный. «Этотъ цвѣтъ! этотъ драгоцѣнный  
stones! What has happened to thee?" — The young girl  
камень! Что сдѣлаться съ ты?» — Красавица раз-  
related to her with simplicity her meeting with the fairy,  
сказывать онъ простоушно о свой встрѣча съ волшебница  
and while doing it the flowers, diamonds and pearls  
и между тотъ цвѣтъ, алмазъ и жемчугъ  
issued just so from her lips. "Good!" muttered  
сыпаться такъ съ онъ губа. «Хорошій же!» проворчать  
the mother; "to-morrow I will send to the wood my elder  
мать; «завтра посылать въ роща мой старый  
daughter, and it will be the same with her."  
дочь, и быть тотъ же съ онъ.»

And the next morning she said to her daughter:

И на друго́й у́тро онъ скáзывать свой дочь:

“To-day thou shalt go to fetch water: take the pitcher; but

«Ны́нче ты пойтí за водá: взять кувши́нь; но

pay attention, if thou meetest at the spring an old woman,

смотре́ть же, е́сли встрѣ́ать у исто́чникъ стару́шка,

give her to drink, and be very civil to her.”

дава́ть онъ напíваться, и хороше́нко прила́скиваться къ онъ.»

The wicked girl frowned, took the pitcher with ill

Зло́й дѣвчо́нка нахму́риваться, взять кувши́нь съ

humour; went to the wood against her will, and grumbled

доса́да; пойтí въ ро́ща нѣхотя, и ворча́ть

all along the road. The good old woman was already

весь въ доро́га. Стару́шка сидѣ́ть у́же

seated near the spring. “Draw me some water, my

у исто́чникъ. «Зачерпа́ть я водá, мой

dear!” said she to the young girl; “it is hot, I wish

ми́лый!» сказа́ть онъ дѣвчо́нка; «(есть) жа́ркій, хоте́ть

to drink.” — “What stuff! I am not come here

напíваться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не прíйти сюда́ за то,

to serve old vagabonds; thou wilt have to drink

чтобы́ услу́живать ста́рый бродя́га; напíваться и

without me.” — “How rude thou art!” said the old

безъ я.» — «Како́й же гру́бый ты!» скáзывать ста-

woman to her; “I will punish thee. From this moment with

ру́шка онъ; «я на́казывать ты. Съ это́тъ порá при

each of thy words there shall issue from thy mouth either

ка́ждый тво́й сло́во выпада́ть изъ у ты ро́тъ или́

a serpent or a frog.” She disappeared, and the wicked

змя́ или́ лягу́шка.» Онъ исче́заетъ, а зло́й

girl ran home after having broken her pitcher

дѣвчо́нка побѣ́жать домо́й разби́вать свой кувши́нь



from spite. "What hast thou to tell me my dear daughter?"  
съ досада. «Что скáзывать, мѣлый дóчка?»

asked her mother, when she saw her at a distance. —  
спрашивать мать, видѣть онъ издалека. —

"I have nothing to tell!" answered the daughter; and all  
«Нéчто скáзывать!» отвѣчать дочь; и

at once there issued from her mouth two vipers and two  
вдругъ выскáкивать изъ онъ ротъ два змѣя и два  
toads. "What do I see! what horror!" cried the mother;  
жаба. «Что я видѣть! какóй страхъ!» закричать мать;

"but it is thy sister who is the cause of all that! I  
«по твой сестра (есть) виновáтый въ весь éтотъ! Я  
will make her feel it." And they ran to beat the young girl.  
давáть онъ знáть.» И онъ бросáться бить меньшóй дочь.

Frightened by their threats, she went to hide herself in  
Испугáться угроза, онъ скрывать въ  
the wood, ran long without daring to look behind her,  
роща, бѣгать дóлго, не смѣть оглядываться,

fled very far and at last lost herself. But this  
зabыгáть далéко, и наконéцъ потерять дорóга. Но éтотъ  
was for her good. The son of the king, who was  
быть къ онъ счáстíе. Сынъ цáрский, котóрый

amusing himself at that time with hunting, was just  
забавляться тутъ охóта, находíться въ тотъ

then in the wood; he saw the young girl, who, seated  
врéмя въ роща; увíдѣть красáвица, котóрый, сидѣть  
on the grass, was weeping bitterly. "What has happened to  
на травá, плакать горько. «Что сдѣлаться съ  
thee? why dost thou weep, my dear?" asked he, taking  
ты? о что ты плакать, мѣлый?» спрашивать онъ, взять

her gently by the hand. — "Alas! how can I help  
онъ лáсково за рука. — «Богъ мой! какъ я не

weeping! My mother has driven me out of the house." She  
 пла́кать! Ма́тушка выгоня́ть я изъ до́мъ. Онъ  
 spoke, and the flowers and the precious stones issued from  
 говори́ть, а цвѣтъ и драгоцѣнный ка́мень сы́паться съ  
 her rosy lips, and her tears were changed into pearls.  
 ро́зовый губа, и слеза́ обраща́ться въ жемчу́жина.

"What is the meaning of that?" asked the son of the king;  
 «Что значить э́тотъ?» спра́шивать сынъ ца́рский;  
 "whence come these flowers, these pearls and these stones?"  
 «отъ что э́тотъ цвѣтъ, жемчу́гъ и ка́мень?»

The poor child related to the prince what had  
 Бѣдня́жка расказа́ывать ца́рский сынъ о то́мъ, что  
 happened to her. He became in love with her, and  
 случать́ся съ онъ. Онъ полюби́ть онъ, и  
 he loved her more on account of her being so good and  
 полюби́ть ещё бо́лье за то, что онъ бы́ть такъ до́брый и  
 so pretty, than on account of her flowers and precious  
 ми́лый, неже́ли за онъ цвѣтъ и драгоцѣнный  
 stones. He took her with him, presented her to the king  
 ка́мень. Онъ взя́ть онъ съ себѣ, предста́влять онъ ца́рь,  
 his father, whom she pleased also, and the king  
 свой о́тець, кото́рый онъ пона́равится та́кже, и ца́рь  
 permitted his son to marry her. Thus she became  
 позволя́ть сынъ жени́ться на онъ. Тако́й о́бразъ онъ сдѣ́латься  
 a princess, and on the death of the king, when her husband  
 царевна, а по сме́рть ца́рь, ко́гда онъ му́жъ  
 mounted the throne of his ancestors, she became queen,  
 восходи́ть на престо́лъ о́тцовскій, ца́рица,  
 and was a good queen. And her wicked sister, what  
 и бы́ть до́брый ца́рица. А онъ зло́й сестра́, что  
 happened to her? She closed her life in a miserable  
 сдѣ́латься съ онъ? Онъ конча́ть свой жи́знь жа́лостный

way. Her mother, whom she vexed and irritated incessantly, was forced to drive her from house: престанно, быть принужденный выгонять онъ изъ домъ; nobody would give her an asylum, and she went to hide никто не хотѣть давать онъ пристанище, и онъ скрывать herself in the forest, where she died shortly after of vexation ся въ лѣсъ, гдѣ умирать скоро съ досада and hunger. и голюдъ.

## CONSTRUCTION.

84.—The grammatical order of the words in Russian is further removed from the natural construction, and inversions are more frequent than in English, French or even German; this however causes no obscurity, in as much as the inflections of the words sufficiently indicate their relative concord or dependence. With respect to the order of the propositions in the sentence, it is nearly the same in the four languages, as is seen in the following examples.

Если гѣній и дарованія ума	If genius and talents merit
имѣютъ право на благодар-	the gratitude of the nations,
ность народовъ, то Россія	Russia owes a monument to
должна Ломоносову монументъ.	Lomonossov. <i>Karamzin.</i>

Побѣды, завоеванія и величіе	The victories, the conquests
государственное, возвысивъ	and the grandeur of the empire,
духъ народа Россійскаго, имѣли	by elevating the intelligence
счастливое дѣйствіе и на самый	of the Russian nation, had a
языкъ его, который, будучи	happy influence even on the
управляемъ дарованіемъ и	language, which, when em-

вкусомъ писателя умнаго, можетъ равняться нынѣ въ силѣ, красотѣ и пріятности съ лучшими языками древности и нашихъ времёнъ.

*Карамзинъ.*

Повелитель многихъ языковъ языкъ Россійскій не только обширностію мѣстъ, гдѣ онъ господствуетъ, но купно и собственнымъ своимъ пространствомъ и доволъствіемъ великъ передъ всѣми въ Европѣ. Карлъ V, Римскій Императоръ, говаривалъ, что Испанскимъ языкомъ съ Богомъ, Французскимъ съ друзьями, Нѣмецкимъ съ неприятелями, Италіянскимъ съ женскимъ поломъ говорить прилично. Но если бы онъ Россійскому языку былъ искусецъ, то конечно къ тому присовокупилъ бы, что имъ со всѣми оными говорить пристойно. Ибо нашёлъ бы въ нёмъ великолѣпіе Испанскаго, живость Французскаго, крепость Нѣмецкаго, нѣжность Италіянскаго, сверхъ того богатство и сильную въ изображеніяхъ краткость Греческаго и Латинскаго языка.

*Ломоносовъ.*

ployed by the talent and the taste of man of genius, can now rival in strength, beauty and delicacy the noblest tongues of ancient and modern times.

*Karamzin.*

The Russian language, the parent of many others, is superior to all the languages of Europe not only by the extent of the countries where it is dominant, but also by its own comprehensiveness and richness. Charles the Fifth, Emperor of the Romans, said that one ought to speak Spanish to the Divinity, French to one's friends, German to one's enemies and Italian to ladies. But had he been acquainted with Russian, he would assuredly have added that one could speak it with each and all. He would have discovered in it the majesty of the Spanish, the vivacity of the French, the strength of the German, the sweetness of the Italian, and in addition energetic conciseness in its imagery with the richness of the Greek and Latin.

*Lomonossov.*

## THIRD PART

## ORTHOGRAPHY.

## USE OF THE LETTERS.

85.—We have already seen (§ 7—10) that several letters lose their own peculiar sound, taking that of the letter with which they have the closest affinity, and that certain other letters are silent, disappearing entirely in the pronunciation. In such cases the object of *Orthography* is to indicate the letter which has lost its own peculiar sound and taken an accidental one; and, to do that, recourse must be often had to etymology, in order to discover a derivative and give it, by the help of the grammatical forms, such an inflection as may serve to show the form of the doubtful letter.

Vowels. 86.—Several vowels are often confounded in writing, on account of the close affinity or perfect identity of their pronunciation. As this confusion arises almost invariably from the absence of the tonic accent, it is necessary, in order to discover the form of the letter, to find a derivative or an inflection of the word where the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:



we write: ямщикъ (and not емщикъ), a postilion.  
яйцо (and not ейцо), an egg. . . .  
ячмень (and not ечмень), barley. . .  
тяну (and not теку), I draw. . . .  
вяжу (and not вежу), I bind. . . .  
жалю (and not желю), I pity. . . .  
шалуна (and not шелуна), a rogue,  
часы (and not чesы), a watch. . . .  
щадить (and not шедить), to spare,  
молитва (and not малитва), a prayer,  
вдова (and not едова), the widow. .  
говорить (and not заварить), to speak.

because we say: ямъ (primitive word), a relay.  
яйца (nom. plur.), eggs.  
ячный (derivative), of barley.  
тянутъ (3d pers. pl.), they draw.  
вяжешь (2d pers. sing.), thou bindest.  
жалъ (primitive), pity.  
шалость (derivative), roguery.  
часъ (primitive), the hour.  
пощада (derivative), pardon.  
онъ моли́тъ (3d pers. sing.), he prays.  
вдовы (nom. plur.), the widows.  
го́воръ, speaking, & разгово́ръ, discourse.

**Е. Ё.** — The two vowels most commonly confounded are *e* and *ё*. In order to know which of them ought to be used, recourse must be had to the dictionary. We may however observe that the letter *ё* is never used in words taken from foreign languages; as: каде́тъ, a *cadet*; слёса́рь, a *locksmith* (*Germ. Schloßer*); пе́ня, *fine* (*Lat. pœna*), excepting in Ве́на, *Vienna*, which is properly speaking a Slavonic word. Sometimes the vowel *и* (or *і*) is changed in the derivatives into *ё*; as: бесе́да, *conversation*; де́ти, *children*; Алексе́й, *Alexis*; Серге́й, *Sergius*; Апри́ль, *April* (from сиде́тъ, *to be seated*; дитя́, *child*; Алексе́й, Серге́й, Апри́лий). In the words ле́карь, a *physician*; ле́карство, a *medicine*; ле́чить, *to heal*, &c.; which some persons write ле́карь, ле́карство, ле́чить, the Dictionary of the Russian Academy preserves the letter *ё*. These vowels may in some occasions be distinguished. As the vowel *e* is in certain cases pronounced *io* or *o*, and the vowel *ё* has this sound only in some words (§ 8), it is necessary to look for an inflection or a word in which the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write: слеза́ (and not слэза́), the tear. . . . .  
е́ль (and not ёль), the fir. . . . .  
берёзникъ (and not берёзникъ), a birch kopse,  
ле́дникъ (and not лёдникъ), an ice-house. .  
утверди́ть (and not утвёрди́ть), to affirm.  
гнѣте́ніе (and not гнѣтѣніе), persecution.

on account of: слёзы (nom. plur.), the tears.  
ёлка (diminutive), a little fir.  
берёза (primitive), a birch.  
лёдъ (primitive), ice.  
твёрдый (primitive), firm.  
гнѣтъ (primitive), stick for packing.

**Е. Э.** — The vowel *э* is used at the beginning of the Russian words эй, *ho!* эхъ, *hey!* э́тотъ, *this*; э́кой and э́такой, *oh what!* also at the beginning of foreign words and after a vowel; e. g. эква́торъ, the *equator*; э́фиръ, *ether*; поэ́ма, a *poem*;

поѣтъ, *a poet*. After *i* we can in this case employ the vowel *e*, as in піеса, *a piece*. Such words as had been incorporated into the Russian language before the vowel *э* was in use, are written with *e*; as: евангеліе, *the gospel*; епископъ, *a bishop*; епархія, *a diocese*; евнѹхъ, *an eunuch*; Европа, *Europe*, and some others. The vowel *e* is further used for the Latin or German letters *je*, *gi* and *ge*; as прое́кътъ, *a project*; реѣ́стръ, *a register*; ефе́съ, *the sword-hilt*, ефре́йторъ, *a corporal* (*Lat. profectum, register; Germ. Gefäß, Gefreiter*).

II. I. — The vowel *i* is used, instead of *u*, before all the vowels and before the semi-vowel *й*; as: сі́е, *that*; при́ча́тъ, *to accustom*; при́ятный, *agreeable*; ге́ній, *genius*, as also in the word мі́ръ, *the world*, and its derivatives: мі́рско́й, *worldly*; всемі́рный, *universal*; Влади́міръ, *Vladimir*, to be distinguished from мі́ръ, *peace*, and its derivatives; as: мі́рный, *peaceful*; ми́ри́тъ, *to reconcile*; сме́рный, *calm*. In words formed from the numerals, as: пяти-аршинный, *of five yards*; семи-уго́льный, *heptagon*, &c., the letter *u* is retained, but a hyphen must be placed between the two parts of the word. In the word мѣ́ро, *the holy oil*, and its derivatives: мѣ́ропома́заніе, *unction*; мѣ́роно́сица, *bearer of aromatics*; мѣ́ропома́зани́къ, *the Lord's anointed*, the Slavonic letter ѿѿѿѿца has been retained.

II. Ы. — The vowel *ы* is formed by the union of *ѣ* and *и*; in compound words however it is necessary to retain the form of these two letters, and write, for instance: предше́дущій, *preceding*; безы́мянный, *anonymous*, &c. It is only in the words compounded of иска́тъ, *to seek*, and игра́тъ, *to play*, that the letters *ѣ* and *и* are joined and form *ы*; e. g. сы́щикъ, *an emissary*; ро́зыскъ, *the inquiry*; сыгра́ться, *to play quits*; разыгра́тъ, *to raffle for* (instead of сѣѿѿѿѿкъ, ро́зѿѿѿѿкъ, сѣѿѿѿѿѿѿтъ, раѿѿѿѿѿѿтъ). — In foreign words after *ц* the vowel *и* is employed, although pronounced *ы*; thus we write меди́цина, *medicine*; цѣ́ркуль, *compasses*; цѣ́фра (which some persons write цы́фра), *a cipher*; excepting цыга́нъ, *a gypsy*, and цыфо́ръ, *ciphers*. — In the adjectives it is necessary to distinguish the terminations *ыѣ* and *ій*, as: по́стный, *of Lent*; ле́тний, *of summer*, and its compounds: со́вершенноле́тний, *of full age*; столе́тний, *centenary*; &c.; the word мла́дольтний, *young* is an exception.

87.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ъ, Ѣ), the two first of which are placed after consonants, and the last after vowels, are vowels only half uttered (§ 9), ѣ being half of the vowel *o*, ъ half of the vowel *u*. Semi-vowels.

The semi-vowel ѣ at the end of words may be used after all the consonants, while the semi-vowel ъ cannot be placed either after the gutturals (г, к, х) or the lingual (ц). The hard or liquid sound of these two letters, which is generally perceived after consonants, as: брать, *the brother*, and брать, *to take*; пылъ, *flame*, and пылъ, *dust*; станъ, *the stature*, and станъ, *become*, is not distinguished after the hissing letters (ж, ч, ш, щ), as in the words: ножъ, *a knife*, and ложъ, *a lie*; мечъ, *a sword*, and съчь, *to cut*; камышь, *the reed*, and мышъ, *a mouse*; тощъ, *fasting*, and ночь, *the night*.

In the middle of a word the semi-vowel ъ is placed after all the consonants, excepting г, к, х, ц; e. g. судьба, *destiny*; весьма, *very*; обезьяна, *a monkey*; деньги, *money*; письмо, *a letter*; польза, *utility*; сельдь, *a herring*; тюрьма, *the prison*, &c. The semi-vowel ѣ, in words formed with a preposition, is only retained before the vowels, *e, u, ѡ, ю, я*; as: отъѣмлю, *I take away*; предыдущій, *preceding*; въѣхать, *to enter*; объюродѣть, *to become a fool*; объявить, *to announce*. The same is the case with the Latin prepositions *ad* and *ob*, as in the words адъютантъ, *an adjutant*; объективный, *objective*.

The semi-vowels ъ and Ѣ are sufficiently distinct; the former (ъ) can only be used after a consonant, the latter (Ѣ) only after a vowel, as we have already seen, § 9.

88.—The feeble consonants (б, в, г, д, ж, з), which, at the end and in the middle of a word before a strong letter, are articulated like their corresponding strong consonants (п, ф, к or х, т, ш, с, § 10), may be distinguished from the latter by an inflection of the words. Thus: Consonants.

we write:	бобъ, <i>a bean</i> , and цѣпъ, <i>a flail</i> ,	.....	боба and цѣпа.
	ловъ, <i>capture</i> , and графъ, <i>a count</i> ,	.....	лѡва and графа.
	кругъ, <i>a circle</i> , and крюкъ, <i>a hook</i> ,	.....	крѹга and крюка.
	Богъ, <i>God</i> , and духъ, <i>spirit</i> ,	on account of <i>gen. sing.</i>	Бѡга and дѹха.
	кладъ, <i>treasure</i> , and братъ, <i>brother</i> ,	.....	клѡда and брата.
	ножъ, <i>a knife</i> , and ковшъ, <i>a scoop</i> ,	.....	ножа and ковши.
	тузъ, <i>the ace</i> , and усъ, <i>the mustache</i> ,	.....	туза and уса.
	трѹбка, <i>a pipe</i> , and шапка, <i>a cap</i> ,	.....	трѹбокъ and шапокъ.
	лавка, <i>a bench</i> , and фѣйка, <i>a blow-pipe</i> ,	.....	лавокъ and фѣйокъ.
	бѹлка, <i>sentry-box</i> , and ѹтка, <i>a duck</i> ,	on account of <i>gen. pl.</i>	бѹдокъ and ѹтокъ.
	крѹжка, <i>a goblet</i> , and мѹшка, <i>little fly</i> ,	.....	крѹжекъ and мѹшекъ.
	сказка, <i>a tale</i> , and плѣска, <i>a dance</i> ,	.....	сказокъ and плѣсокъ.

In cases where the change of inflection fails to indicate the doubtful letter, recourse must be had to etymology to discover the root from which the derivative word is formed. Thus:

we write:	прѡсѣба, <i>a prayer</i> (and not прѡзѣба), . . .	as coming from:	просѣтъ, <i>to pray</i> , from the root проос.
	женѣтъба, <i>marriage</i> (and not женидѣба), . .		женѣтъ, <i>to marry</i> (in <i>Sl. жени́тва</i> ).
	бѹдочникъ, <i>a sentry</i> (and not бѹточникъ), .		бѹлка, <i>sentry-box</i> , <i>gen. pl.</i> бѹдокъ.
	присѹтствіе, <i>presence</i> (and not присѹдствоіе), .		суть, <i>3d pers. pl.</i> of есмь, <i>I am</i> .
	жжѣнный, <i>burnt</i> (and not сжѣнный), . . .		жжѣшь, <i>2d pers. sing.</i> of жгу, <i>I burn</i> .
	рѣбчикъ, <i>a hazel-hen</i> (and not рѣпчикъ), . .		рѣбѡй, <i>with variegated feathers</i> .
	грѣчневый, <i>of buck-wheat</i> (and not грѣшневый),		грѣча, <i>buck-wheat</i> , ч being immutable.
	свѣчникъ, <i>a candlestick</i> (and not свѣшникъ),		свѣча, <i>a candle</i> , from свѣтъ, <i>light</i> .
	гудѡчникъ, <i>violinist</i> (and not гудѡшникъ), . .		гудѡкъ, <i>violin</i> , т and к change into ч.
	ветѡшникъ, <i>rag-gatherer</i> (and not ветѡчникъ),		ветѡшь, <i>a rag</i> , from вѣтъхй, <i>old</i> .
	наѹшникъ, <i>slanderer</i> (and not наѹчникъ), .		ѹхо, <i>the ear</i> , х changes into ш.
	Волѡшскій, <i>Walachian</i> (and not волѡжскій),		Волѡхъ, <i>a Walachian</i> , х ch. into ш.
	Вѡлжскій, <i>of the Volga</i> (and not вѡлжскій),		Вѡлга, <i>the Volga</i> , г changes into ж.

The present orthography of the word порѹчникъ, *a lieutenant* (from порѹчитъ, *to commit*, from рука, *the hand*), is not in conformity with its etymology; for the termination being чикъ (as in потѡтчикъ, *an indulger*, from потѡкѡтъ, *to connive*, from такъ, *thus*), it ought to be written порѹтчикъ, as some persons still write it. Another exception is свѡдѣба, *wedding* (formerly свѡтъба), from свѡтѡтъ, *to ask in marriage*.

The word столпъ, *a column*, is written in Slavonic with a п, as also its derivatives: стѡлпникъ, *the stylite*; столпотворѣніе, *the building of the tower of Babel*; but in Russian it is written with a б, столбъ, a consonant which is retained in the words столбовой, *columnar*; столбчѡкъ, *basalt*; столбнѡкъ, *tetanus*; остоленѣтъ, *to be stupefied*.



З. — The feeble consonant *з* of the preposition *въ* or *во*, *изъ*, *изъ*, *разъ* or *ро*, is changed, in derivatives, before the strong consonants *к*, *п*, *т*, *х*, into its corresponding strong consonant *с*; thus we write: *вспомнить*, *to remember*; *воспитаніе*, *education*; *исключить*, *to exclude*; *нисходить*, *to descend*; *расторгнуть*, *to tear up*; *рѣчь*, *a catalogue* (instead of *въспомнить*, *возпитаніе*, *изключить*, *низходить*, *разторгнуть*, *рѣчь*). Before the strong consonants *с*, *ц*, *ч*, *ш* and *щ*, the letter *з* keeps its form, as in *изъстари*, *formerly*; *разъцвѣстіи*, *to open*; *изчезнуть*, *to disappear*; *возшествіе*, *accession*; *разъщепъ*, *a slit*. The prepositions *безъ* and *чрезъ* in this case remain unchanged; thus we write: *безподобный*, *incomparable*; *чрезчуръ*, *excessively* (and not *бесподобный*, *чресчуръ*). It is the same with the preposition *сѣ*, which retains its form before a feeble consonant, although it then takes the pronunciation of *з*; thus we should write: *сбавить*, *to diminish*; *сдѣлать*, *to make*; *сгонять*, *to drive off*; *сжимать*, *to compress* (and not *збавить*, *здѣлать*, *згонять*, *зжимать*).

Ц. — The compound consonant *ц* cannot be used instead of *mc* or *dc*, when *m* and *d* are radical letters, and *c* belongs to the termination of the word; thus we write: *плотскій*, *carnal*, from *плоть*, *the flesh*; *персидскій*, *Persian*, from the Latin *Persis*, *sidis* (and not *плѣцскій*, *персѣцскій*); but we write: *нѣмецкій*, *German*, from *Нѣмецъ*, *a German*; *казацкій*, *Cossack's*, from *казакъ*, *a Cossack*. In the numerals we write *дц*, as: *одѣнадцать*, *eleven*; *двѣдцать*, *twenty*, words contracted from the Slavonic *одѣнѣ-на-десять*, *двѣ-десять*.

Щ. — The compound consonant *щ*, in the derivatives, is the commutation of *ск* and *ст*, or else it supplies the place of the consonants *зч*, *жч*, *сч*, as: *вошчить*, *to wax*, from *воскъ*, *wax*; *умащать*, *to anoint*, from *масть*, *balm*; *прикащикъ*, *a clerk*, from *приказъ*, *an order*; *рѣщикъ*, *a cutter*, from *рѣзать*, *to cut*. But the form of the radical letters is retained in the words *счастье*, *happiness*; *считать*, *to count*; *счётъ*, *разсчётъ*, *an account*; *мужчина*, *a man*, which must not be written *щастіе*, *щитать*, *щѣтъ*, *разщѣтъ*, though we also write *мущина*.

Ф. Θ. — The consonants *ф* and *θ* are used, the former for Russian words, and such Greek and other words as are





from водѣть, *to lead*, by the change of *ѣ* into *и*.—

5) Lastly consonants are doubled in some foreign words; e. g. аббáтъ, *an abbot*; суббóта, *Saturday*; аккѹла, *a shark*; классъ, *a class*; колóссь, *a colossus*; коллѣгія, *a college*; метáллъ, *a metall*, &c.

90.—The *capital* letters (прописныя бѹквы) are <sup>Capital letters.</sup> employed, generally speaking, in Russian as in English. Thus a capital letter is placed at the beginning of every sentence, of every line of poetry, of all the proper names of men, places, nations, rivers, mountains and winds, as also of all those of a science, an art or a profession, if taken in an individual sense which distinguishes the particular science, art or profession from every other. All titles and ranks joined to a proper name must also be distinguished by an initial capital, and the same is the case with the appellative names of tribunals, companies and corporate bodies.

#### DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

91.—The division of words into syllables, when one part has to be carried on from one line to another, is marked by the hyphen, and is performed according to the following rules which are based on the etymology of the words:

1. Monosyllables, as: страсть, *passion*; здравъ, *in health*; чувствъ, *of the senses (gen. pl.)*, cannot be divided.

2. Prepositions and every other affix, whether initial or final, may be separated from the rest of the

word; e. g. от-ра́да, *mitigation*; о-тра́ва, *poison*; без-конéч-ный, *infinite*; востóкъ, *the East*; мед-вѣдь, *a bear*; ра́з-умъ, *reason*; сво́йство, *property*; ям-ши́къ, *a postilion*; зѣм-скій, *terrestrial*; дру́жба, *friendship*; Царь-гра́дъ, *Constantinople*, &c.

3. The compound consonants жд, см, as also кс, кз, нс and дж in foreign words, cannot be divided; e. g. ме́-жду, *between*; три́-ста, *three hundred*; Але-кса́ндръ, *Alexander*; э-кза́мень, *examination*; кле-пси́дра, *a clepsydra*; Ро́джеръ, *Roger*.

4. The final vowels, as: своя́, *his*; круто́е, *steep*; as well as the terminations of the verbs, as: пою́тъ, *they sing*; стрóятъ, *they build*; жалѣ́етъ, *he regrets*, cannot be separated from the rest of the word.

#### ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS.

Russian  
words.

92.—Every Russian word is written as a single word, if by the loss of one of its component parts the sense would be changed; e. g. соуча́стникъ, *an accomplice*; избра́нный, *elected*; отчё́тъ, *an account*; при́быль, *a gain*; морехо́дъ, *the navigation*; водопрово́дъ, *an aqueduct*, &c. On this subject the following rules must be observed:

1) The prepositions which are employed both conjointly and separately (§ 76), are written conjointly: а) Before the verbs and words derived from them; e. g. прино́сить, *to bring*; прино́съ, *a gift*; приноше́ние, *the offering*; приноси́тель, *a bearer*, &c. б) Before such other parts of speech as are not used without the preposition; as: на́выкъ, *the habit*; извѣ́стный, *known*; вета́рь, *anciently*;

на́взни́чь, *backwards*; о́земь, *on the ground*. c) Before nouns, adjectives, pronouns and adverbs as form with the preposition an adverb or a conjunction; e. g. встаринѹ, *formerly*; извнѣ, *from without*; сначала, *in the first place*; вслѣдѣ, *in the footsteps*; потомѹ, *hence*. If the noun from which the adverb is formed, is determined by another word, the preposition is written separately; e. g. съ нача́ла вѣ́ка, *at the beginning of the century*; по то́мѹ случáю, *on this occasion*. The adverbs во-пѣрвыхъ, *firstly*, во-вторыхъ, *secondly*; по-ру́сски, *in Russian*; по-солда́тски, *like soldiers*, and others similar, as also the compound prepositions изъ-за́, *from behind*, and изъ-пóдъ, *from under*, are written with the hyphen (§ 94, 2).

2. The prefix particle *нѣ* is always written conjointly with the pronoun or the adverb following; as: нѣ́кто, *some one*; нѣ́который, *some*; нѣ́когда, *once*.

3. The particle *ни* is written conjointly in the words ни́кто, *nobody*; ни́что, *nothing*; ни́гдѣ, ни́куда, *nowhere*; ни́когда́, *never*; ни́какъ, *not at all*, and separately in all other words; as: ни́ ко́торый, *none*; ни́ зерна́, *not a grain*.

4) The negative *не* is written separately before verbs and the circumstantial adverbs; as: не смѣ́ю, *I dare not*; не здѣ́сь, *not here*, with the exception of verbs whose proper meaning is changed by the negative *не*, or which are not used without the negative; as: недостава́ть, *to be wanting*; ненави́дѣть, *to hate*; недова́рять, *to distrust*. It is written conjointly with nouns, qualifying adjectives and adverbs, when the negation refers to the object



or to the quality, and not to the verb; e. g. *неравенство нравовъ* быва́етъ причи́ною спо́ровъ, *dissimilarity of character is the cause of the quarrels*; *несно́сная ску́ка* убива́етъ меня́, *an unbearable ennui is killing me*; *я гуляю* неохóтно, *I walk against my will*; and also when the noun has no meaning without the negation; e. g. *не́топырь*, *a bat*; *негодя́й*, *a good-for-nothing*; *не́дугъ*, *a disease*. With the participles the negative *не* is written conjointly when, like the adjectives, they serve to determine the nouns; and separately when, like the verbs, they have a complement; e. g. *незна́ющий челове́къ*, *an ignorant man*; *челове́къ, не зна́ющий своихъ обяза́нностей*, *the man who is ignorant of his duties*.

5. The particle *бы* or *бъ* is written conjointly only in the conjunctions *чтобы́* (or *чтобъ́*) and *дабы́*, *that*; everywhere else it is written separately. It is necessary to distinguish the conjunction *чтобы́* from the pronoun *что* with *бы́*; e. g. *жела́ю, чтобы́ онъ далъ тебѣ́ эту́ кни́гу*, *I wish him to give you this book*; *что бы́ далъ я за́ эту́ кни́гу*, *what would I have given for this book!* In the latter case *бы́* is written separately.

6. The conjunction *уже́* or *ужъ́* is conjointly written in the words *уже́* or *ужъ́*, *already*; *да́же*, *even*; *ни́же́*, *not even*, and separately in the other words; as: *и́ли же́*, *or even*; *одна́ко же́*, *however*; *то́тъ же́*, *the same*. It is also written conjointly in the copulative conjunction *та́кже*, and the adverb *то́же*, *too*; but it is written separately in the comparative conjunction *та́къ же́*, *as well*, and in the pronoun *то́*.



же, *the same*; е. г. онъ такъ же хорошó пишеть, какъ читáеть, *he writes as well as he reads*: онъ такъ же дворяни́нъ, *he is also gentleman*; я бо́ленъ и онъ то́же, *I am sick and he too*; я говорю то же, что и вы, *I say the same thing as you*.

93.—Foreign words are written with those letters of the Russian alphabet, which give as closely as possible the pronunciation of these words in the language from which they are borrowed: the rule is the base of the orthography of foreign words. Such are for instance the words: епа́рхiя, *a diocese*; ка́ѳедра, *the pulpit* (*Gr. ἐπαρχία, κάθεδρα*); сенáторъ, *a senator*; коро́на, *a crown* (*Lat. senator, corona*); áжio, *theagio*; карéта, *a carriage* (*Ital. agio, carreta*); футъ, *a foot*; сплiнъ, *the spleen* (*from the English*); актёръ, *an actor*; меда́ль, *a medal* (*Fr. acteur, médaille*); брýстверъ, *the parapet*; кýчеръ, *a coachman* (*Germ. Brustwehr, Kutscher*); ватерпáсъ, *a level*; фарвáтеръ, *the channel* (*Dutch: waterpas, vaarwater*); вéнзель, *a cipher*; трактiръ, *an eating-house keeper* (*Pol. węzeł, traktyer*). Some of these words in passing into the Russian language have taken terminations peculiar to it, while others have undergone an alteration both in their pronunciation and orthography; such are: фити́ль, *a match*; фона́рь, *a lanthorn* (*mod. Gr. φυτίλι, φανάριον*); алта́рь, *an altar*; мрáморъ, *marble* (*Lat. altare, marmor*); яхта, *a yacht*; ми́чманъ, *a midshipman* (*from the English*); шпа́га, *a sword* (*Ital. spada*); салфéтка, *a napkin*; табакéрка, *a snuff-box* (*Fr. serviette, tabatière*); бiржа, *the exchange*; та-рélка, *a plate* (*Germ. Börse, Teller*); шкiперъ,

*master of a merchantship*; шлюзъ, *a sluice* (*Dutch: schipper, sluis*), &c.

The same thing takes place in the Greek and Latin proper names; as: Алексáндръ, *Alexander*; Николáй, *Nicholas*; Филипъ, *Philip*; Пáвелъ, *Paul*; Елéна, *Helen*; А́вгустъ, *Augustus*; Ю́лий, *Julius*; Натáлія, *Nataly*. Some follow the pronunciation of both Greek and Latin; as: Омíръ and Гомéръ, *Homer*; Алкивіáдъ and Алцибіáдъ, *Alcibiades*; Фивъ and Фебъ, *Phæbus*; Віóтія and Беóція, *Boeotia*. Others are formed from the Greek or Latin genitive; as: Віáнтъ, *Bias*; Цицерóнъ, *Cicero*; Артемíда, *Artemis*; Пліáда, *the Iliad*; Венéра, *Venus*; Церéра, *Ceres*.

The proper names of lands, countries, rivers, towns and other names of modern geography, some retain their Latin denomination; as: Гермáнія, *Germany*; А́встрія, *Austria*; Сиці́лія, *Sicily*; Неáполь, *Naples*; Флорéнція, *Florence*; Везúвій, *Vesuvius*, &c. Others are written as they are pronounced in the language to which they belong; as: Лондо́нъ, *London*; Чéльси, *Chelsea*; Гриничъ, *Greenwich*; Мю́нхенъ, *Munich*; Ма́йнцъ, *Mayence*; Брі́ссель, *Brussels*; Ма́асъ, *the Meuse*; Шéльдá, *the Scheldt*; Рей́нъ, *the Rhine*; Кордо́ва, *Cordova*; Хéресъ, *Xeres*; Бадахóсъ, *Badajoz*; Схевени́нгенъ, *Schevening*; Кéльнъ, *Cologne*; Рéгенсбургъ, *Ratisbon*; Лítтихъ, *Liege*; А́хенъ, *Aix-la-Chapelle*; Карлсру́э, *Carlsruhe*; Піачéнца, *Piacenza*; Ливóрно, *Leghorn*; Бордо́, *Bordeaux*; Марсéль, *Marseille*; Лоáра, *the Loire*, &c. Some of these names have passed into the Russian through another language; such

are: Пари́жъ, *Paris* (from the Italian *Parigi*); Римъ, *Rome* (from the Polish *Rzym*); Копенга́генъ, *Copenhagen* (from the German *Kopenhagen*, instead of the Danish *Kiøbenhavn*). Some German names of countries and towns inhabited by Slavonian tribes have been replaced by Slavonic names; as: Вѣна, *Vienna*; Бресла́влъ, *Breslau*; Тору́нь, *Thorn*; Льво́въ, *Lemberg*; Вѣн҃грія, *Hungary*, and some others.

The proper names of historical persons and others in modern languages are written in Russian according to the pronunciation of the language to which they belong; such are the English names: Ше́кспиръ, *Shakespeare*; Бе́йронъ, *Byron*; Юмъ, *Hume*; Джо́нсонъ, *Johnson*; Ньюто́нъ, *Newton*; the French names: Ришельё, *Richelieu*; Даву́, *Davoust*; Руссо́, *Rousseau*; Ролле́нъ, *Rollin*; Делі́ль, *Delille*; the German names: Блю́херъ, *Blücher*; Віландъ, *Wieland*; Гёте, *Gæthe*; Га́йднъ, *Haydn*; the Italian names: Херубі́ни, *Cherubini*; Чинаро́за, *Cimarosa*; the Polish names: Ча́рторы́скій, *Czartoryski*; Пото́цкая, *Potocka*; Нѣмце́вичъ, *Niemcewicz*, &c.

We may here remark that the proper names of the Russian language, the alphabet of which differs from that of the other European tongues, ought to be written in each foreign language in such a manner as to give as closely as possible the Russian pronunciation. Thus the Russian proper names: Кара́мзинъ, Пу́шкинъ, Держа́винъ, Шишкóвъ, Жу́ковскій, Меще́рскій, Чи́черинъ, Каза́нь, Вязьма, Рже́въ, Жито́миръ, are written in English: *Karamzin*, *Pushkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Shishkof*, *Zhukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitcherin*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rzhev*, *Zhitomir*, in French: *Karamézine*, *Pouchekine*, *Derjavine*, *Chichekof*, *Joukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitchérine*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rjev*, *Jitomir*; in German: *Karamsin*, *Puschkin*, *Dershawin*, *Schischkow*, *Shukowski*, *Meschtscherski*, *Tschitscherin*, *Kasan*, *Wjasma* or *Wäjsma*, *Rshev*, *Shitomir*, and

the same in other languages. Exceptions will be found to this rule in certain proper names which have been adopted long ago; as: Москв́а, Санктпетерб́ургъ, Варш́ава, Мит́ава, and some others; in English: *Moscow, Saint-Petersburg, Warsaw, Mittau*; in French: *Moscou, Saint-Petersbourg, Varsovie, Mittau*; in German: Мос́кау, Ст. Петерсбург, Варш́ау, Мит́ау. See the particular Vocabularies of the *Parallel Dictionaries of the Russian, French, German and English languages*.

### ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

94.—The *orthographic signs* (зна́ки правописа́нiя) of the Russian language are: the *accent* (ударе́нiе), the *hyphen* (едини́тельный знакъ or черто́чка), the *sign of brevity* (кра́тка́я) and the *diæresis* (надстро́чное двоето́чiе).

1. The *accent* (') serves to distinguish the homonyms or words which though written alike have a different meaning, as also the similar inflections of the words; as: за́мокъ, *a castle*, and замо́къ, *a lock*; по́дать, *the tax*, and пода́ть, *to give*; сто́ить, *it costs*, and стои́тъ, *he is up*; выхо́дить, *to obtain*, and выходи́тъ, *to go out*; сло́ва, *of the word* (*gen. sing.*), and слова́, *the words* (*nom. plur.*). The accent is further placed on the relative pronoun что́, to be distinguished from the conjunction что; e. g. зна́ешь ли что́ тебѣ́ полезно, *dost thou know what is useful to thee?* and зна́ешь ли, что́ тебѣ́ полезно уче́нiе, *dost thou know that study is useful to thee?*

2. The *hyphen* (-) is used to mark the connection between two or more words; e. g. Алексáн-



дро-Нéвская Лáвра, *the monastery of St-Alexander Nevsky*; генерáль-маіóръ, *major general*; штабъ-офицёръ, *field officier*; Ивáнь-да-Мáрья, *cow-wheat*. The hyphen is also used with the adverbs formed from the prepositions *vo* and *no*, with the compound prepositions (§ 92. 1), and with the particle *mo*; as: какъ-то, *such as*; что-то, *something*. It is also used at the end of a line, when a part of a word has to be carried on to the line following.

3. The *sign of brevity* (v) is placed over the vowel *u* (ü), converting it into a semi-vowel, which joined with the preceding vowel forms only a syllable; as: мой, *my*; сей, *this*; нейдётъ, *he does not go*; найдти, *to find*. This mark is also used in prosody to indicate the short syllables, as we shall see when speaking of Russian versification.

4. The *diæresis* (..) is a double dot which is placed over the vowel *e* (ë), when it has the sound of *io* or *o*; e. g. слёзы, *tears*; жёлтый, *yellow*. The letter *ë* is also used as the equivalent of the French *eu* and the German *ü*, as in the words Монтеcкьё, *Montesquieu*; актёръ, *player* (*Fr. acteur*); Гёте, *Gæthe* (*Germ. Göthe*).

#### MARKS OF PUNCTUATION.

95.—The *marks of punctuation* (знаки препинанія) are the same in Russian as in English, viz: the *comma* (запятая ,), the *semicolon* (точка съ запятою ;), the *colon* (двоеточіе :), the *full stop or period* (точка .), the *note of interrogation* (знакъ



вопросительный ?), the *note of exclamation* (знакъ восклицательный !), the *points of suspension* (знакъ пресѣкательный . . . .), the *dash* (знакъ мыслетдѣлительный or тире —), the *parenthesis* (вмѣстительный знакъ or скóбки ( )), the *inverted commas* or *quotation* (внóсный знакъ or кавычки « ») and the *paragraph* (крáсная строкá). The use of these marks of punctuation is nearly the same in all languages.

## FOURTH PART

## PROSODY.

96.—Prosody consists of two parts: 1) *orthoepy* (слоγοударёние), or the measured pronunciation of syllables and words, and 2) *versification* (стихоcло-жёние), which teaches the laws of writing poetry correctly.

Division of  
prosody.

## ORTHOEPY.

97.—In the pronunciation of words attention must be paid not only to the particular articulation of each of the letters of which they may be composed, but also and especially to the accented syllable. The *prosodical* or *tonic accent* (ударёние, § 12) is a stress of the voice which is heard in one of the syllables of a polysyllabic word, so that this syllable shall strike the ear more forcibly than the others and appear to predominate over them. Thus in the words вода́, *water*; не́бо, *the sky*; cвобóда, *liberty*; превосходíтельство, *excellency*, the voice is raised in the syllables да́, не́, бо́, ду́. The accented syllable is, in prosody, called *strong* or *long*, and the unaccented syllables *weak* or *short*.

Prosodical  
or tonic  
accent.

Place of the  
accent.

98.—The accent, in polysyllabic words, is found:  
1) on the radical syllable: вѣдать, *to know*; вѣдо-  
мость, *information*; невѣжество, *ignorance*; исповѣ-  
дать, *to confess*; увѣдомить, *to inform*; извѣстie,  
*news*; 2) on the termination: вѣдунъ, *a sorcerer*;  
вѣстовой, *orderly*; извѣстить, *to notify*; заповѣднѡй,  
*interdicted*; 3) on the preposition: вѣвѣдать, *to ex-  
plore*; заповѣдь, *commandment*; повѣсть, *a tale*;  
сѡвѣсть, *conscience*; 4) on the prefix in compound  
words: бѣговѣститъ, *to ring to church*.

These examples show that the accentuation of words in Russian is very variable; and practice and the dictionary can alone enable us to place the accent correctly, as no fixed rules on the subject have hitherto been discovered. We may however remark that a word, when standing alone, may be accented differently to what it is, when joined to other words; thus the pronouns at times lose their accent; again, the nouns and the numerals which have the moveable accent, in the other cases often transfer it to the preposition; in like manner the apocopated adjectives and the verbs transfer it to the negative; e. g. чтѣ отца твоего и мать твою, *honour thy father and thy mother*; друзья мои, *my friends*; по берегу, *along the shore*; за моремъ, *beyond the sea*; онъ не веселъ, *he is not gay*; я не бралъ, *I have not taken*. We may here repeat, what we have already indicated in the declensions and conjugations, that, in the change of inflections, the accent is often transferred from one syllable to another.

VERSIFICATION.

99.—The Russian versification, which, like that of England and Germany, is based on the prosodical accent, is termed *tonic* versification; while that of French language and various other modern tongues, depending on the number of syllables employed, is called *syllabic*, and that of the Greeks and Romans, which is based on quantity or the length and brevity of the syllables, is termed *metrical*.

100.—In the tonic versification the verses are also measured by *feet*, as in Greek and Latin. The *foot* (стопа) or *metre* (размѣръ), in Russian poetry, is formed by the union of two or three syllables, one of which has the prosodical accent. The feet employed in the structure of Russian verse are six in number, viz:

1. The *iambus* (ямбъ), composed of two syllables with the prosodical accent on the last, ∪—: зима́, весна́.

2. The *choreus* (хорей) or *trochee* (трохей), consisting of two syllables with the accent on the first, ∪—: лёто, о́сень.

3. The *pyrrhic* (пирри́й), formed of two unaccented syllables, ∪∪: such are the two first syllables of беспо́лезный. The pyrrhic in the middle of a line is used instead of an iambus or a trochee.

4. The *dactyl* (да́ктиль), formed of three syllables with the accent on the first, —∪∪: па́лица, ра́достный.

5. The *amphibrach* (амфи́бра́хий), formed of three syllables with the accent on the second, ∪—∪: причи́на, цѣ́люю.

6. The *anapæst* (анáпестъ), formed of three syllables with the accent on the last, ∪∪—: чело́вѣкъ, вре́мена́.

Denomina-  
tion of the  
verses.

101.—The verse or line of poetry takes its name from the nature of the feet of which it is composed. There are verses of six, five, four, three, two feet, and even of one, which are termed *iambic*, *choraic*, *dactylic*, *amphibrachic*, *anapæstic*, *dactylo-choraic*, *anapæsto-iambic*, according as they may be formed of a single one of these metres or of a combination of several. The lines which have not the same number of feet are termed *free* verses (во́льные стихи́).

The verses most commonly employed in modern Russian poetry are the following :

1. The *hexameters* or the *dactylo-choraic* verses of six feet, of which the four first are dactyls or trochees, the fifth a dactyl, and the sixth a trochee. This line is an imitation of the Greek and Latin hexameter, from which it differs only in the employment of trochees instead of spondees, which do not exist in Russian. It is used in epic poems, especially in such as are translations from the ancient languages. Ex.

— ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ |

Ге́кторъ геро́и съ ко́леси́цы съ ору́жьемъ спря́нуль на зе́млю;  
О́стрыя ко́пья ко́лѣбля, потѣ́къ по ряда́мъ ополче́ній.  
Въ бо́и распа́ляя Троя́нъ; и возжѣ́гъ жесто́кую сѣ́чу;  
Всѣ́ обрати́лись отъ бѣ́гства и ста́ли въ лицѣ́ Аргивя́намъ.

Гибдицъ.



2. The *iambic* verses of six feet, or *alexandrine* (александрійскіе), are used in great compositions, such as epic and didactic poems, tragedies, comedies, satires, epistles, elegies, idyls, &c.; e. g.

У— | У— | У— | У— | У— | У— |

Ужé блѣднѣетъ день, скрывáясь за горóю;  
Шумящія сгадá толпятся надъ рѣкóй.

Жукóвскій.

3. The *iambic* verses of five feet, but seldom used; e. g.

Ты говорíшь, что мучусь надъ стихóмъ,  
Что не пишú его, а сочиняю.

Князь Вяземскій.

The *iambic* verse of five feet is sometimes used alternately with that of six; e. g.

Какóе торжествó готóвить дрéвнiй Римъ?  
Кудá текúть наро́да шумны вóлны?

Батюшковъ.

4. The *iambic* verses of four feet are used in odes and other lyrical poems; and those of three, two and even a single foot, in songs and other light compositions; e. g.

О ты, что въ гóрести напрáсно  
На Бóга рóпщешь, человѣкъ!  
Внимáй, коль въ рéвности ужáсно  
Онъ къ Гову изъ тúчи рекъ.

Ломоносовъ.

Ужé со тмóю нóщи  
Простéрлась тишина;  
Выхóдитъ изъ-за рóщи  
Печáльная луна́.

Капнистъ.

Игра́й, Аде́ль,  
 Не знай печа́ли!  
 Харі́ты, Лель  
 Тебя вѣнча́ли.

Ал. Пушкінъ.

Ступа́й,  
 Сзыва́й  
 Съ лѣсо́въ  
 Всѣхъ псовъ  
 На край  
 Ай, ай!

Державинъ.

5. The *free iambic* verses are employed in fables, tales, epigrams, epitaphs, inscriptions, &c.; e. g.

Въ прихо́жей на полу́,  
 Въ углу́,  
 Пусто́й мѣшо́къ валя́лся.  
 У са́мыхъ низки́хъ слугъ  
 Онъ на обти́рку ногъ нерѣ́дко помыка́лся;  
 Какъ вдругъ  
 Мѣшо́къ нашъ въ че́сть попался,  
 И весь черво́нцами набі́тъ:  
 Въ окованномъ ларцѣ въ сохрѣ́нности лежи́тъ.

Крыловъ.

6. The *choraic* or *trochaic* verses of six, five, four, three and two feet, sometimes of the same length and sometimes of a different length, are used in various poems. The choraics of four feet are chiefly used in songs; e. g.

— — — — —  
 — — — — —

Нѣтъ подру́ги нѣжно́й, нѣтъ преле́стной Лилы!  
 Всѣ оспро́тѣло!  
 Плачь, Любо́вь и Дру́жба! плачь, Гиме́нь уны́мый!  
 Сча́стье улетѣ́ло!

Батюшковъ.

Слѣвсья, Алексѣандръ, Елсавѣта,  
До вечерней тихихъ дней зарі;  
И сіяніе въ страну полсвѣта  
Съ высоты престола распрострі.

Бобрѣвъ.

Стѣнеть сізый голубѣчекъ,  
Стѣнеть онъ и день и почъ;  
Міленькій егѣ дружѣчекъ  
Отлетѣлъ надѣлго прочъ.

Дмїтріевъ.

Всѣхъ цвѣтѣчковъ бѣлъ  
Рѣзу я любілъ;  
Ею тѣлько въ полѣ  
Взоръ мой веселілъ.

Дмїтріевъ.

Мы сердцами  
И слезами  
Молимъ васъ,  
Бѣги гнѣва  
И Эрѣва,  
Въ страшный часъ.

Карамзінъ.

7. The *dactylic* verses, composed of dactyls alone, are only used with two, three or four feet, when longer they become fatiguing to the ear; e. g.

— 00 | — 00 | — 00 | — 00 |

Бѣже! Царя храни!  
Сильный, державный,  
Царствуй на славу намъ;  
Царствуй на страхъ врагамъ;  
Царь православный.  
Бѣже! Царя храни!

Жукѣвскій.

О домовітая лѣсточка!  
Мѣленька, сізенька птїчка!  
Грудь краснобѣла, косѣточка,  
Лѣтняя гѣстѣя, пѣнїчка!

Державинъ.

Рѡза ль, ты рѡзочка, рѡза душистая,  
 Всѣмъ ты красавица, рѡза цвѣтокъ,  
 Вѣйся, плетіся съ лилеей и ландышемъ,  
 Вѣйся, плетіся въ мой пышный вѣнокъ.

Баронъ Дельвицъ.

8. The *dactylo-choraic* verses of four, three and two feet, are more commonly met with than the pure dactyls, and are used in songs, odes and other lyric poems; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — —

Гдѣ ты, прекрасная, гдѣ обитаешь?  
 Тамъ ли, гдѣ пѣсни поётъ Филомела,  
 Кроткая ночи пѣвица,  
 Сидя на мѣртовой вѣтви?

Карамзинъ.

Пчёлка златая,  
 Что ты жужжишь?  
 Всѣ вокругъ летая,  
 Прочь не летишь.

Державинъ.

9. The *amphibrachic* verses of six and five feet are employed in idyls, epistles, elegies; and those of four, three and two feet in various lyrical compositions; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — | — — — | — — —

Въ часы пированья, при сладостномъ пѣніи струнъ оживлённыхъ,  
 Уныніе мрачно на мигъ не оставило мѣлаго гостя.  
 Снѣдающа горестъ лежитъ глубоко въ его сердце!  
 Умолкните, пѣсни! да чистую радость раздѣлять согласно.

Мѣрзляковъ.

Владыка Морвѣны  
 Жилъ въ дѣдовскомъ замкѣ могучій Ордалъ.  
 Надъ озеромъ стѣны  
 Зубчатые замокъ съ холма возвышались.

Жуковскій.

Въ то время съ весною  
Любовь насъ ждала:  
Въ то время . . . . со мною  
Подруга жила.

Мих. Дми́триевъ.

10. The *anapæstic* verses from one to four feet are used in odes and also in fables; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — |

Посмотри,  
И держи ты въ умъ,  
Нѣсь мужикъ пуда три  
На продажу свинцѹ въ небольшо́й котомѣ.

Сумаро́ковъ.

The *anapæstic* line is sometimes used alternately with the *amphibrachic*; e. g.

Не стремись добродѣтель напрасно  
Людей отъ неправды унять.  
Въ нихъ пороки плодятся всечасно:  
Нельзя ихъ ничѣмъ исправлять.

Богдановичъ.

11. The *anapæsto-iambic* verses are oftener employed than the above mentioned; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — |

Ты бѣги, бѣги, нашъ злодѣй отъ насъ;  
Не дадимъ тебѣ поругаться намъ.  
Ты взгляни, взгляни на солдатъ своихъ  
Между реберъ ихъ ужъ трава растётъ.

Шулѣнниковъ.

102.—The *cæsura* (пресѣчѣніе) is a rest which divides the line of poetry into two parts, each of which is called a *hemistich* or half verse. This rest, which is only found in the *iambic* verses of

Cæsura.



six and of five feet, and in the trochaic verses of six feet, requires the word to be finished after the third foot in lines of six feet, and after the second in lines of five. Ex.

Изъ мрачныхъ нѣдръ земныхъ | исходитъ бурный пламень;  
Кустарники дрожатъ, | о камень бѣется камень.

Херасковъ.

И щитъ и мечъ | бросають съ знаменами;  
Вездѣ пути | покрыты ихъ костями.

Жуковскій.

Здѣсь Гименъ прикованъ, | блѣдный и безгласный,  
Гаситъ у гробницы | свой свѣтильникъ ясный.

Батюшковъ.

Though it is not absolutely necessary that the cæsure should be always marked so distinctly, still the syllable terminating the first hemistich can never be united with that commencing the second; thus the cæsure can never come between a preposition and its complement.

Termination  
of the  
verses.

103.—The syllable terminating a line of poetry may be either strong or accented, or it may be weak or unaccented. In the former case the termination is *masculine*, and in the latter *feminine*; e. g.

Люблю, любить ввѣкъ буду! *fem. term.*

Кляните страсть мою, *masc. term.*

Безжалостныя души, *fem. term.*

Жестокія сердца! *masc. term.*

Карамзинъ.

From this double termination it results that lines of the same metre have not always the same number of syllables. Iambic verses of six feet have twelve syllables with the masculine termination, and thirteen with the feminine; those of four feet have eight syllables with the masculine and nine

with the feminine. Choraic verses of four feet have seven syllables with the masculine termination, and eight with the feminine. The same rule applies equally to the other verses.

104.—The uniformity of sound in the words terminating lines of poetry forms *rhyme* (рѣзма), which is also *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the termination of the verse; e. g. Rhyme.

Кто будетъ принимáть мой пѣпель отъ костѣа?	} <i>masc. rhyme.</i>
Кто будетъ безъ тебѣ, о мѣлая сестрѣ,	
За грѣбомъ слѣдовать въ одѣждѣ погребѣльной,	} <i>fem. rhyme.</i>
И мѣро изливáть надъ ўрноу пелѣчьной?	

*Бѣтѣшковѣ.*

Rhymes were introduced into the poetry of such modern tongues as could not imitate the Greek and Latin versification, because, the language of poetry differing in them but little from prose, something was requisite to please the ear; in Russian however, where the accent is strongly marked and supplies the place of quantity, rhyme is not absolutely necessary; the same is the case in English and German, while in French rhyme is indispensable. Poetry without rhyme is called *blank verses* (бѣлые стихѣ). Verses which in Russian poetry are always written without rhyme, are the hexameters and those imitating metres of the ancient languages.

105.—According to the various combinations of the masculine and feminine rhymes, they are divided into *consecutive* (пѣрные стихѣ), *alternate* (перестѣпные) and *mixed* (смѣшанные). This combination of rhymes is used chiefly in stanzas. A *stanza* or *strophe* consists of a number of verses expressing a complete idea. It varies in length from four to fourteen lines. We here give an example of the strophe of four lines in alternate rhymes, and another of the strophe of fourteen lines, in mixed rhymes and choraic metre. Stanza or strophe.

Бсѣ вокругъ уныло! Чуть зефиръ весѣнный  
 Памятникъ лобзаетъ;  
 Здѣсь въ жилищѣ плача, тихій смѣрти гѣній  
 Рѣзу обрываетъ.

*Батюшковъ.*

Разъ въ Крещенскій вечерокъ  
 Дѣвушки гадали:  
 За ворота башмачокъ,  
 Снявъ съ ногъ, бросали;  
 Сивътъ полѣли; подъ окномъ  
 Слушали; кормили  
 Счетнымъ курицу зерномъ;  
 Яркій воскъ топили;  
 Въ чашу съ чистою водою  
 Клали перстень золотой,  
 Серьги изумрудны;  
 Разстилали бѣлый платъ,  
 И надъ чашей пѣли въ ладъ  
 Пѣсенки подблюдны.

*Жуковскій.*

Poetic  
licenses.

102.—In following the above rules of versification the poet is at time compelled to sacrifice some of the minor principles of grammar, to syncopate terminations, and to place words in an inverted order. These sacrifices to number, harmony, rhyme and elegance, are termed *poetic licenses* (стихотворческія вѣольности).

# CORRECT CONSTRUCTION

OF THE

## EXERCISES

We started for Potsdam on horseback yesterday at six o'clock in the morning. Nothing can be duller than this road; there is nothing but deep sand everywhere and not a single object of interest meets the eye. The view of Potsdam however, and particularly that of Sans-Souci is very fine. We stopped at an hotel, before arriving to the gates of the town. After resting ourselves and ordering our dinner, we entered the town. At the gate our names were written down. On the parade square, opposite the palace, which is adorned with Roman colonnades, the guards were exercising: the men are superb, and the uniforms splendid. The view of the palace from the garden is very fine. The town is generally speaking well built; in the principal street there are several magnificent houses constructed on the plan of the largest palaces of Rome at the expense of the late king: he gave them to any one he chose. At present these vast edifices are empty or only occupied by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under the care of a Russian soldier, who has lived there from the time of the Empress Anne. We had some difficulty in finding him. The decrepit old man was seated in a large arm-chair, and having heard that we are Russians, he extended his hands towards us and exclaimed with a trembling voice: "Glory to God! Glory to God!" He tried at first to speak

Reading-  
Exercise.  
p. 18.

with us in Russian; but we had difficulty in understanding each other. We were obliged to repeat almost every word. "Let us go into the temple of God", said he, "and let us pray together, though there is no church festival to-day." My heart was filled with devotion, when I saw the door of this church opened, where solemn silence has reigned so long, scarcely broken by the low sighs and the feeble voice of the old man in prayer, who comes every sunday to read in this spot the holiest of books, which prepares him for a happy eternity. In the church every thing is neat and clean. The books and the church ornaments are kept in a trunk. The old man arranges them from time to time reverently praying. "It often grieves me to the heart", said he, "to think that after my death, which cannot be far distant, no one will take care of this church." We remained half an hour in this holy spot; then bidding the venerable old man adieu, we wished him a peaceful death.

*Karamzin.*

Exercises on  
declension of  
substantives  
P. 58.

Хозяинъ сада и хозяйка дома. Садъ хозяина и домъ хозяйки. Рыканіе львовъ; пѣніе соловья; мычаніе быка, вола и коровы; ржаніе лошадей; лай собакъ; воркованье голубя; карканье вороновъ; кваканье лягушекъ; вой волка; жужжаніе пчѣль, жуковъ и мухъ; блеяніе барановъ и овецъ. Каминъ безъ огня; окна безъ стѣколъ; каша безъ масла; сѣдла безъ стремень; зарядъ безъ пули; острова и луга безъ деревьевъ; поваря, кучера и работники безъ работы; дѣти безъ матери; солдаты безъ ружей; ружья безъ кремней: статуя безъ рукъ и безъ ушей; медвѣжата и львѣнки безъ шерсти; корабль безъ коекъ; суда безъ вѣселъ; чай безъ сахара и безъ сливокъ. Пукъ перьевъ; дюжина чашекъ, тарелокъ и стакановъ; сотня форелей; десятокъ дынь; множество гусей, утокъ и лебедей; стада скота; табунъ лошадей. Мужъ древности, и мужья жѣны. Цвѣты садовъ, и цвѣта радуги. Листы бумаги, и листья деревъ. Зубы во рту, и зубья у гребня. Колѣна Израильтянъ, колѣни у человека, и колѣнья растенія. Ловъ сельдей у береговъ Америки былъ очень выгоденъ для Англичанъ, Шведовъ, Голландцевъ и Французовъ.

Совѣтъ друзьямъ. Слава Богу. Горе врагамъ. Приказъ войску. Повиновеніе законамъ. Дай ѣсть гусямъ, курамъ, голубямъ и щенкамъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правиламъ



чѣсти. Жить прилично состоянію. Законъ, данный какъ дворянамъ, такъ и мѣщанамъ. Протѣвѣтся желаніямъ дѣтей, и волю родителей. Книжки, перья и тетради принадлежатъ ученикамъ, а не учителямъ. Поля и луга принадлежатъ отцу и матери, а сады, какъ и лѣса, сыновьямъ и дочерямъ. Нравится мужчѣнамъ, и не нравится жѣнщинамъ. Зелень нравится глазамъ. Картины нравятся сестрамъ, а цвѣты братьямъ. Полѣзный отечеству; пріятный Богу и людямъ; вѣрный Государю; любезный друзьямъ; милый дѣтямъ. Человѣкъ познаѣтся по лицу, по голосу, по росту, по походкѣ и по тѣлодвиженіямъ. Туристы путешествуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италіи, Германіи, Америкѣ и Египту.

Братья купили домъ, сады, деревню и поля, а продали быковъ, коровъ, лошадей и карету. Читаетъ басню, рисовать картину, писать письма, играть пѣсню, чинить перья. Посѣщать братьевъ и сестеръ, матерей и дочерей, отцовъ и сыновей. Купить шляпу и шапку, перчатки и башмаки, чулки и подвязки. Завоеватель побѣдилъ войска, и покорилъ народъ. Пѣтръ разбилъ Шведовъ, завоевалъ Эстляндію и Лифляндію, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ Россію. Россіане побѣждали Татаръ, Турокъ, Шведовъ, Французовъ и Персіанъ. Дожди освѣжаютъ зѣмлю, а холода истребляютъ саранчу.

Дѣти, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воины, сражайтесь храбро! Боже, спаси Царя! Господи, помилуй меня!

Ученики пишутъ грифелемъ или перомъ и чернилами. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣемъ и съ Василіемъ, а Марья играетъ съ Софьею и съ Любовью. Пирогъ съ миндалемъ; горшокъ съ цвѣтами; кадка съ водою; человѣкъ съ умомъ и съ гѣніемъ; галерея съ картинами. Города съ кремлемъ и гавапью; деревья съ листьями, цвѣтами и плодами; кивера съ султанами; комната съ дверями; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ виномъ; вино съ водою; профессора съ учениками; письмо съ деньгами. Рисовать карандашѣмъ, писать кистью и красками. Купецъ торгуетъ саломъ, мыломъ, молокомъ, мукѣю, крупѣю, виномъ, пивомъ, сукнами, полотнами и кружевами, а сосѣди купца торгуютъ волами, баранами и лошадьми. Дворцы съ башнями; церкви съ колокольнями; дома съ окнами; зданія съ галереями; полки съ знаменами. Горы изобилуютъ золотомъ, серебромъ, мѣдью, желѣзомъ, ртутью и свинцомъ.

Басни о быкѣ и баранѣ, объ ослѣ и соловьѣ; о кузнечикѣ и муравьѣ; о дубѣ и тростникѣ; о лисицѣ и воронѣ, о волкѣ и ягнѣнкѣ. Сказки объ ангелъ-хранителѣ, объ Иванѣ и Марьѣ; повѣсти о Сергѣи пустынникѣ, о героѣ и гѣни. Говорить объ играхъ, объ урокахъ, о времени, о мѣстѣ, объ обстоятельствахъ. Въ сочиненіи говорятъ много о чести и безчестіи, о добродѣтели и пороцѣ, о храбрости и малодушіи. Въ водѣ живутъ рыбы, лягушки и слизни, а въ лѣсу живутъ лвы, медвѣди, лисицы и зайцы.

Книги ученика нравятся учителю. Свѣтъ солнца озаряетъ землю лучами. Цвѣта розы пріятны глазамъ. Друзья челоѣчества дѣлаютъ добро людямъ. Въ саду цвѣтутъ розы съ шипами; ибо нѣтъ розы безъ шиповъ. Дѣти умываются водою рѣки. Стаканъ съ водою стоитъ на столѣ комнаты. Слѣзы радости блестятъ въ глазахъ матери. Слава злодѣевъ непродолжительна; но имена благодѣтелей сѣяютъ въ вѣчности. Счастье на землѣ состоитъ въ спокойствіи духа и въ чистотѣ совѣсти. Юноши любятъ пѣніе соловья, на берегу ручья, при свѣтѣ луны. Говорить правду есть долгъ дѣтей. Любить Бога сердцемъ и душою. Муравьи и бобры могутъ служить примѣромъ челоѣку. Поѣздка въ Москву и въ Кіевъ. Войти въ бібліотеку для чтенія. Подать учителю тетрадь со стихами на случай праздника. Надобно вставать утромъ, работать днемъ, отдыхать вечеромъ и спать ночью. Громъ пушекъ и звонъ колоколовъ возвестили гражданамъ о прибытіи побѣдителя враговъ отечества.

Exercises on  
the adjectives.  
p. 83.

Пустой карманъ; карманъ пустъ. Крепкій замокъ; замокъ крепокъ. Вѣрный слуга; слуга былъ вѣренъ. Мягкій воскъ; воскъ мягокъ. Спокойный сонъ; сонъ спокоенъ. Достойный сынъ; сынъ достоинъ. Истинный другъ; другъ истиненъ. Совершенный покой; покой будетъ совершенъ. Прозрачное стекло; стекло прозрачно. Древнее преданіе; преданіе было древне. Тѣплое лѣто; лѣто будетъ тепло. Тупое перо; перо тупо. Вѣтхая хижина; хижина ветха. Синяя бумага; бумага синя. Новые дома; дома новы. Богатая семья; семья была богата. Красныя знамена; знамена будутъ красны.

Бѣлая бумага; бѣлѣйшая бумага; самая бѣлая бумага. Невѣ быстро, а Волга быстрѣе. Молоко жидко, а вода жиже. Глубокий ручей; глубочайшая рѣка. Дома высоки, а башни

выше. Хоро́пшй чай; лу́чшй чай; са́мшй лу́чшй чай. Соба́ки ма́лы; ко́шки ме́ньше; по мы́ши ма́лшйшй. Оте́ц мо́лодь; ма́ть мо́ложе; по сестра́ са́мая мо́лодая. Сёно до́рого, а со́лома доро́же. Мо́локо сла́дко; са́харъ сла́ще; по ме́дь са́мшй сла́дкшй.

Бѣловáтая бума́га; буро́ватыя черни́ла; черно́ватая вода́; кра́ска сшпевáта. Буре́нская коро́вка; ма́ленькая лошáдка; пѣгенькая лошáдка; бѣдненькая дѣвочка; старичёкъ старене́къ; стару́шка до́бренька. Пребѣлая бума́га; бума́га бѣлехонька; пресухія дрова́; дрова́ сухо́шеньки.

Хозя́ншъ обш́рныхъ садо́въ, и хозяйка но́ваго до́ма. Ста́канъ хоро́шей водо́ и кра́снаго вина́; цѣлыя горш́ки свина́го са́ла и ело́вой смо́лы. Дѣлай до́бро бѣднымъ дѣ́тямъ и дря́хлымъ стари́камъ, и не ходи́ по чуж́имъ поля́мъ. Вотъ домъ Кня́зя Долгору́каго; вотъ дворе́цъ Гра́фини Толсто́й, а вотъ обш́рные сады́ молоды́хъ Гра́фовъ Завадо́вскихъ. Я див́лся прі́ятному пѣ́ншо прошлогóдняго соловья́. Чини́тъ лебеди́ное перо́ тупы́м но́жикомъ. Вотъ гуси́ныя пѣ́рья, кра́сныя каранда́шъ, то́лстыя тетра́ди, дубо́выя линѣ́йки и больш́е цѣркули, а вотъ сукóнные кафта́ны, тафта́ныя платки́, шѣлковыя чу́лки, пухо́выя шля́пы, то́нкшя поло́тна и тонча́йшя круже́ва. Лю́би непорóчныя нра́вы; чита́й полѣ́зныя кни́ги; чтш стари́хъ лю́дей; хвали́ до́брыя дѣ́ла; береги́ чѣстнаго и вѣ́рнаго слугу́. Подари́ но́вую кни́гу са́мому приле́жному учени́ку. Ты хва́лшъ весѣ́ннюю пого́ду, я́сность лѣ́тнихъ но́чей, о́сеннюю прохлáду и зѣм́не холо́да. Я ува́жаю сла́вныхъ мужей́ и знамен́итыхъ полководцевъ дре́внихъ вре́менъ. Больш́е ма́нѣвры ны́ншняго го́да бѣдутъ въ Кра́сномъ Селѣ́ и на Дудерго́фской Горѣ́.

Онъ вы́ехалъ изъ отцѣ́ва до́ма, и дѣ́лаетъ до́бро сѣ́стриной дочѣ́ри. Онъ про́далъ жѣ́ншю имѣ́нше брата́шну сы́ну. Посѣ́щать Господни́ хра́мы и Бож́и цѣ́ркви. Пови́новаться Господне́й во́ль, и позна́вать вели́чество Бож́ия и́мени. Пѣ́рвая Ру́сская Граммáтика бы́ла написана́ безсмер́тнымъ Ломоно́совымъ, и Росси́йская Исто́ршя Никола́емъ Миха́йловичемъ Карамз́нымъ. Сра́женшя съ Францу́зами происходи́ли подъ Боро́динымъ и подъ Бори́совымъ. Я жива́лъ въ Ново́городѣ́ и въ Бѣлѣ́озерѣ́. Дерѣ́вни Кня́гини Салты́ковой ле́жатъ подъ го́родомъ Ка́шшнымъ.

Вотъ лѣся шуба, соболья шапка, птичье гнѣздо, заячьи мѣха и слоновьи зѣбы. Пудъ олѣняго мяса, аршинъ воловьей кожи, и фунтъ телячьихъ мозговъ. Не ходи по волчьимъ слѣдамъ, и не входи въ медвѣжью берлогу. Разсужденіе о человѣчьемъ глазѣ и о рыбьей головѣ. Онъ торгуется рыбнымъ клѣемъ, бычачьимъ саломъ, козыими шкурами и пѣтушьями грѣбнями.

Хвастунъ похожъ на сою, украшенію павлиньими перьями. Сосѣдовъ братъ пріѣхалъ изъ дальняго города, а сестра изъ дальней деревни. Иваново платье узко, по Петрову еще уже. Добренькая старушка живетъ въ сырѣмъ домѣ, лежащемъ подъ Царѣвнымъ селомъ. Я купилъ медвѣжью шубу съ бобрѣвымъ воротникомъ, и бобрѣвую шапку съ шелковою лентою. Вотъ прекрасная книга въ богатомъ софьянномъ переплетѣ. Гдѣ найдемъ мы примѣръ чистѣйшаго самоотверженія, высшей любви къ отечеству?

Exercises  
on the  
numerals.

P. 97.

У человѣка одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, два уха, двѣ щеки, двѣ руки, двѣ ноги, десять пальцевъ на рукѣ и десять пальцевъ на ногѣ, тридцать два зуба, и семь позвонковъ. Въ високосномъ годѣ четыре времени, двѣнадцать мѣсяцевъ, пятьдесятъ двѣ недѣли и два дня, или триста шестьдесятъ шесть дней, или восемь тысячъ семьсотъ восемьдесятъ четыре часа, или пятьсотъ двадцать семь тысячъ и сорокъ минутъ. Въ книгѣ сто листовъ безъ одного. Оба брата и обѣ сестры. Полтора часа, и полторы минуты. Два рубля съ половиною и три копейки съ половиною. Въ берковцѣ десять пудовъ; въ пудѣ сорокъ фунтовъ; въ фунтѣ тридцать два лѣта; въ лѣтѣ три золотника; въ фунтѣ девяносто шесть золотниковъ.

Двѣ пуховыя шляпы, три шелковые платка, четыре перочинные ножики, пять фарфоровыхъ чашекъ и шесть прекрасныхъ картинъ. Сіи два чѣрные вороны, тѣ три бѣлыя пера, мой четыре новыя книги; эти пять рѣзвыхъ дѣтей. Оба бѣдные сироты и обѣ несчастныя сироты. Двое слугъ, трое мастеровыхъ, четверо дѣтей, шестеро солдатъ, двѣ часы, трѣи очки, пятеры ножицы. Первые полтора часа. Первые сорокъ дней; второе сто ефимковъ, и послѣдняя тысяча гульденовъ.



Я купилъ одного быка и одну лошадь, одинъ столъ и одно зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одна копейка. Тысяча и одна ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцати одного года безъ двадцати одного дня. Не суди о человекѣ по одному проступку и по одной ошибкѣ. Офицеръ съ двадцатью однимъ солдатомъ. Пётръ Первый и Екатерина Вторая царствовали въ осмнадцатомъ вѣкѣ. Шведы уважаютъ Карла Двенадцатаго, а Французы поставили памятникъ Генриху Четвёртому. Статья была писана пятнадцатаго числа Января мѣсяца тысяча восемьсотъ двадцать третьяго года, и происшествіе отнесется къ шестому вѣку, а именно къ пятьсотъ семьдесятъ третьему году.

Шкапъ съ дюжиною фарфоровыхъ тарелокъ, или съ двенадцатью фарфоровыми тарелками. Дрожки, запряжённые парой вороныхъ лошадей, или двумя вороными лошадьми; и карета, запряжённая шестью рыжими лошадьми, или шестёркою рыжихъ лошадей. Городъ лежитъ отсюда въ тысячу верстъ, село въ ста верстахъ, а деревня въ сорокъ верстахъ. Въ Москвѣ было тысяча шестьсотъ церквей, или сорокъ сороковъ церквей. Я довольствуюсь осмидесятью рублями (или двумя сороками рублей) въ мѣсяцъ, то есть девятьюстами шестидесятью рублями въ годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до сорока лѣтъ; и она умерла сорока трёхъ лѣтъ. Она довольна сорока копейками, и она удивилась ста картинами. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе ста тысячъ рублей въ годъ. Городъ съ двумя башнями; комодъ съ шестью ящиками; домъ съ сорока окнами; крѣпость со ста пушками; церковь о пяти главахъ; домъ о трёхъ ярусахъ; деревня съ четырьмя вѣтрянными мельницами. Я люблю равно обоихъ сыновей и обеихъ дочерей. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дѣтей, а она оставила пятеро сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ сладить съ этими двумя упрямыми лошадьми. Онъ жилъ долго съ своими пятью двоюродными братьями. Къ этому миллиону старыхъ Прусскихъ ефимковъ надобно прибавить тысячу тѣхъ новыхъ рублей.

Каждому по сту рублей и по сороку копѣекъ. Въ некоторыхъ мѣсяцахъ по тридцати дней, а въ другихъ по тридцати одному дню. Въ каждомъ сараѣ было по двѣ кареты, а въ каждой каретѣ по три мужіины и по четыре жёныны. Каждому по сту по девяносту рублей и по сороку по пяти копѣекъ.



У насъ по двадцати по семі очковъ. Каждая часть сочиненія продаётся по полутору рублѣ серебромъ.

По утру не должно судить о полудни. Въ первые полдніи онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ четыре часа по полуночи, или въ пять часовъ по полудни. Это случилось въ послѣдніе полгода тысяча восемьсотъ сорокъ четвертаго года. Первые полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ продолженіе первыхъ получаса. За мною было полтора ста тысячъ рублѣй годоваго дохода.

Exercises  
on the  
pronouns.  
p. 107.

Я люблю тебя, а ты меня обижаешь. Мы уважаемъ его, а её мы любимъ душевно. У меня много денегъ, а у тебя нѣтъ ни копѣйки. Заступись за него, и понадейся на неё. Посиди со мною, и приходи съ нимъ. Скажи ей, чтобъ она пришла ко мнѣ. Безъ него, безъ ней и безъ васъ жизнь мнѣ скучна. Я не вижу ихъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для нихъ. Мы уважаемъ васъ, а вы забыли насъ. Будь во мнѣ увѣренъ: я поговорю о тебѣ. Мнѣ пріятно быть съ нею. Я не доверяю себѣ, а ты доволенъ собою. Мы бережемъ себя, а они себѣ вредятъ.

Мой братъ, твоя сестра и его сынъ вмѣстѣ учились. Я стараюсь угодить вашему учителю и нашему смотрителю. Мой домъ красивѣе твоего, а твоя собака меньше моей. Я живу безъ нихъ, и могу обойтись безъ ихъ помощи. Не хвались своими трудами, а подумай о своихъ лѣтахъ. Подойди къ моему столу, и подарь денегъ своей сестрѣ. Мы говоримъ о своихъ дѣлахъ, а вы занимаетесь своимъ урокомъ. Ученіе горько, но плоды его сладки. Твои сады прекрасны; я удивляюсь ихъ красотамъ.

Видишь ли эту собаку и этого кота, этихъ людей и тѣхъ деревьевъ? Въ этихъ земляхъ нѣтъ золота, и въ тѣхъ нѣтъ серебра. Я слышалъ это отъ вашего брата, но я этому не вѣрю. Я хвалю ваше намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оно. Давно ли ты живешь въ семъ городѣ? Я удивляюсь этому саду, а тотъ лучше. Эти перья тупы; сии дома каменные; тѣ улицы узки. Тяжкіе глаза проникательны; такія дѣла не приносятъ чести. Таковы люди.

Человѣкъ, котораго вы видите, очень умѣнъ. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень пріятна. Я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите. Вода, которою я моюсь, очень холодна. Берегись того, кто льститъ тебѣ. Тотъ, у кого много дѣла, не думаетъ о заботахъ. Учитесь тому, чего вы не знаете.

Вотъ такое сукно, какое я купилъ. Какое былъ военачальникъ, таковы и войны. Вотъ другъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба. Слушайся того, въ чьемъ домѣ ты жилъ. Вотъ книга, какиихъ мало, и случаи, каковыя рѣдки.

Который часъ, и въ которомъ часу прийдешь? Какими книгами занимаешься, и какіе люди здѣсь живутъ? Подъ которымъ начальникомъ ты служишь, и какому языку ты учишься? Чьи эти дома? Съ чего позволенія ты вышелъ со двора? Я не видалъ, чью шляпу бросили на полъ. Я не знаю, съ чьими детьми онъ гуляетъ. О чемъ ты заботишься, и чемъ я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ чемъ можно поздравить тебя, и отъ чего ты получилъ эти деньги? Сколько вѣрстъ отъ этого города до того? Изъ сколькихъ томовъ состоитъ сіе сочиненіе? По сколько рублей достанется вамъ изъ этой прибыли?

Ты самъ согласишься со мною: самый звукъ его голоса пріятенъ. Я нанимаю сію квартиру у самого хозяина. Самые пороки находятъ у васъ извиненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о себѣ самомъ. Вы недовольны собою самими. Мы видѣли её самоё. Самая смерть не страшна. Мы всѣ довольствуемся однимъ жалованіемъ. Такъ думаютъ однѣ женщины. Мы оба хотимъ служить единому Богу. Въ каждомъ собраніи были граждане обою пола. Они разсыяны по всему свѣту. Надобно привыкать ко всякой пищѣ.

Нѣтъ никого здѣсь; не проси помощи ни у когô. Ты не вѣшь ничего, и это не годится ни къ чему. Учись чему нибудь, и скажи это кому нибудь. Я не продамъ своего дома ни за что, и вы продали свой за ничто. Изъ ничего не сдѣлаешь ничего. Въ теченіе нѣсколькихъ мѣсяцевъ онъ ежедневно покупалъ по нѣскольку сотъ душъ.

Объ сестры дурно говорятъ другъ о другѣ. Англичане и Французы ненавидятъ другъ друга. Мы ходимъ гулять другъ съ другомъ. Сіи дома лежатъ одинъ за другимъ. Доски набросаны одна съ другою.

Я дѣлаю добро, сколько я желаю. Ты желаешь учиться. Онъ думаетъ, что знаетъ всѣ науки, и хвастаетъ своими успѣхами. Мы не дерзаемъ вѣрить вашимъ словамъ, хотя вы говорите правду. Мои сосѣди питаются однимъ хлѣбомъ, и уповаютъ на Провидѣніе. Вы торгуете сукномъ, и вы требуете

мно́гаго. Го́лубь ворку́еть; го́рлица сто́нетъ; соба́ка ла́етъ; щёнки брёшутъ; лягу́шки ква́кають; во́роны ка́ркають; лвы́ рыка́ють; оле́нь току́еть; ку́ры куда́хчутъ; ко́шка мяучи́тъ; бы́ки мыча́тъ; пче́ла жужжи́тъ; зме́я шипи́тъ; орлы́ трубя́тъ; соловьи́ щебе́чутъ; овцы́ блею́тъ; сви́ный хрю́кають; лиси́ца визжи́тъ; осёлъ реве́тъ; калку́нь кло́хчетъ; перепёлка вавá-каетъ; пѣту́хъ кукурека́етъ; со́ро́ка скреко́четъ; попуга́й болта́етъ. Гро́мъ греми́тъ; вода́ кипи́тъ; двѣ́ри скри́пѣтъ; ручьи́ жужжа́тъ; огóнь трещи́тъ; звѣ́зды сверка́ють; со́лнце свѣти́тъ; пче́лы ро́ятся; алма́зы блести́тъ; сухи́е ли́стья хру́щатъ; вѣ́теръ свиста́егъ; снѣ́гъ та́етъ. Со́лнце озаря́етъ зѣ́млю своимъ луча́ми, грѣ́тъ и живи́тъ её. Земля́ обра́щается́ вокру́гъ со́лнца. Вы напрáсно горю́ете.

Я гуля́лъ вчера́ по́ берегу́ рѣ́ки, когда́ со́лнце сади́лось. Мой сестра́ сидѣ́ла подѣ́ деревомъ, кото́рое кача́лось вѣ́тромъ. Вчера́ мы мно́го рабо́тали, чита́ли, писа́ли и рисо́вали. Овцы́ мрутъ отъ стѣ́жи. Его́ мать дави́о умерла́. Непри́ятели заперли́ его́ въ крѣ́пости. Э́тотъ челове́къ ослѣ́пъ, и его́ жена́ оглохла́. Мои́ деревья́ вы́сохли и мои́ цвѣ́ты завя́ли.

Москва́ до́лго бу́детъ красова́ться во гла́вѣ́ городо́въ Ру́сскихъ. Ты бу́дешь игра́тъ, и я бу́ду писа́тъ. Росси́йское госуда́рство бу́детъ безпрерывно́ возвыша́ться, и всегда́ приоб́рѣтѣ́тъ бо́лье́ силы́ и сла́вы. Вели́кий госуда́рь никогда́ не умре́тъ.

Дѣ́лай, что тебѣ́ говоря́тъ, и не ду́май упря́миться. Не теря́й наде́жды, и упова́й на Бо́га, Ступа́йте домо́й, и не толку́йте сто́лько. Не трать в́ремени, и не мучь жи́вотныхъ. Говори́те всегда́ пра́вду, и не спо́рьте о пустя́кахъ.

Соловѣ́й поѣ́тъ; ло́шадь рже́тъ; волкъ во́етъ. Есть́ звѣ́ри, кото́рые спятъ́ всю́ зиму. Ты берѣ́шь мно́го на себя́, и я не беру́сь за э́то дѣ́ло. Зачѣ́мъ вы ми́нете э́ту кни́гу? Онъ жи́ветъ въ Москвѣ́, и слы́ветъ бога́тымъ челове́комъ. Пасту́хъ стри́жетъ ове́цъ; крестья́не пряду́тъ лёнъ и ткуть хо́лстъ. Онъ хо́четъ спать, и вы хоти́те игра́тъ. Мой сосѣ́д берѣ́гъ меня́, какъ родна́го сына́, и не могъ со мно́ю разста́ться. Непри́ятели сожгли́ мно́гие города́; они́ увлекли́сь зло́бою и мщени́емъ. Пасту́хъ пась ове́цъ на лу́гу. Я пошлю́ за ле́каремъ, и ты пришлѣ́шь мнѣ́ денегъ. Э́тотъ го́родъ цвѣ́тѣтъ, и онъ до́лго бу́детъ цвѣ́сти́ силою́ и бога́тствомъ. Я дамъ́

тебѣ книгу, а что ты дашь мнѣ? Ты не можешь говорить: что онъ дастъ мнѣ за это? Не бери на себя того, чего ты не можешь исполнить. Дѣти, живите мирно, не клянитесь, никогда не лгите, и ведите себя хорошенько.

Звѣри ходятъ и бѣгаютъ, птицы летаютъ, рыбы плаваютъ, и черви ползаютъ. Посмотри, сюда идѣтъ солдатъ; за нимъ бѣжитъ собака. Видишь, какъ быстро летитъ эта ласточка; они всегда такъ летаютъ. Сей морякъ долго плавалъ по Черному Мору. Что тамъ плывѣтъ на водѣ? Жѣны Славянъ носили воду и таскали дрова. Что ты несѣшь въ этомъ мылкѣ? Смотри, какую вязанку дровъ этотъ человѣкъ тащитъ. Видѣли тогда, чего не видѣли до того.

Непріятель ринулся въ городъ и кинулся на корысть. Молнія засверкала. Молнія сверкнула, грянулъ сильный громъ, земля дрогнула, церковь затряслась. Братъ мой легъ и захрапѣлъ; онъ громко храпнулъ и проснулся. Могу ли надѣяться, что лира моя тронетъ еще ваше хладное сердце? Солнце заблестало, но не надолго: блеснуло и скрылось. Мы выбросали за окно весь соръ; въ сорѣ мы выбросили и важную бумагу.

Прошлаго года я хаживалъ въ городъ. Сократъ говаривалъ. Нѣмцы издавна живали въ Новѣгородѣ. Живущіи въ Москвѣ, я взжалъ въ Троицкую Лавру. Въ молодія лѣта я живалъ въ деревнѣ.

Если бы камни говорить могли, они научили бы тебя осторожности. Если бы кто нибудь вошелъ къ намъ въ эту минуту, онъ увидѣлъ бы насъ въ отчаяніи, и слышалъ бы наши стenanія и наши вздохи. Есть мало предметовъ въ свѣтѣ, на которые я не обращалъ бы вниманія. Не было такого каменнаго сердца, которое не изливалось бы въ слезахъ.

Солдатъ этотъ служилъ долго, и выслужилъ пенсію. Не всякій выслужить её съ такимъ отличіемъ. Онъ бывалъ во многихъ сраженіяхъ, и вездѣ отличался блистательною храбростью. Особенно отличился онъ при взятіи одной непріятельской батарее. Онъ первый взобрался на брустверъ, убилъ непріятельскаго солдата и взялъ пушку. За это его наградили орденомъ. Потомъ награждали его и другими отличіями. Теперь отправится онъ въ родину, поселится въ своей семьѣ, и будетъ разсказывать о своихъ походахъ, какъ хаживалъ на Турокъ и Французовъ, какъ бивалъ враговъ,



какъ терпѣлъ голодъ, страдалъ отъ ранъ, и утѣшался мыслію, что слѣжить своему Государю сѣрдцемъ и душою. Уповай на меня.

Exercises  
on the  
participles.  
p. 176.

Человѣкъ, любящій правду, ненавидитъ ложь. Купающееся дитя; собака, бросающаяся на прохожихъ. Купецъ, получавшій товары изъ Лондона, продавалъ ихъ выгодно. Купецъ, получившій товары изъ Лондона, продалъ ихъ выгодно. Страждущій болѣзнію, ищетъ облегченія. Зажгій потухшую свѣчу, и вытри замёрзшее стекло. Слава герою, спасшему своё отечество. Рыкающій левъ, мычашій быкъ, лающая собака, поющій пѣтухъ, воркующій голубь, выражаютъ свои чувства и желанія.

Море, волнуемое вѣтрами, устрашаетъ пловцовъ. Дочь, любимая отцемъ, старается заслуживать его любовь. Должно помогать несчастному, гонимому судьбою и преслѣдуемому неудачами. Это снятое молоко, и вотъ тѣртый табакъ. Это заряженное ружьё. На рынкѣ продаются битые гуси, смоленскія верёвки, откормленные поросята и стриженные овцы.

Россія обитаема многими народами. Дѣланные государи любимы своими подданными, и уважаемы сосѣдями. Татары были побѣждены и разбиты на Куликовомъ полѣ. Труды твой будутъ увѣнчаны успѣхомъ. Имена бывають склоняемы, а глаголы спрягаемы. Сей великій полководецъ будетъ чтимъ въ потомствѣ. Москва была разорена и сожжена врагами. Это ружьё заряжено. Эта книга прекрасно переплетена.

Exercises on  
adverbs and  
gerunds.  
p. 181.

Подѣи сюда, ибо я здѣсь живу. Гдѣ вашъ братъ? Его нѣтъ дома. Кудѣ онъ поѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ? Ты судишь умно, а братъ твой судитъ умнѣе. Я хожу шибко, а ты ходишь шибче. Вы говорите по-русски чисто, а сестрица ваша ещё чище. Завтра поѣдемъ мы далѣко, а чрезъ годъ ещё далѣше. Ты поѣшь хорошѣе, но она поѣтъ лучше. Я прошу васъ убѣдительнѣе, я благодарю васъ покорнѣе.

Гуляя на берегу рѣки, я наслаждаюсь прохладой вѣтера. Жалѣя о несчастныхъ, старайтесь помогать имъ. Я васъ учу, желая вамъ добра, и надѣясь, что вы успѣете въ наукахъ. Не умѣя сдѣлать чего нибудь, проси совета, не краснѣя. Дѣлай добро, не боясь никого. Не должно ѣсть лёжа. Служа отечеству и умирая за него, мы исполняемъ свой долгъ.



Получивъ письмо ваше, и узнавъ, чего вы желаете, я немедленно отвѣчалъ. Отобѣдавши, останься дома. Написавши письмо, положивши въ кувѣртъ и запечатавши, отдай его на почту. Пришедши домой, я съѣлъ писать. Женившись, онъ поѣхалъ въ деревню. Просидѣвши часъ у него, я пошелъ домой; раздѣвшись и легши, я скоро уснулъ.

Безъ надежды нельзя жить въ свѣтѣ. Отъ рѣки до лѣсу Exercises on the prepositions, p. 185. двѣ версты. О чѣмъ вы говорите? Мы трудимся для общаго блага. Между домомъ и садомъ пространный дворъ съ конюшнями. Бога ради не унывай. Любовь къ государю и отечеству. Онъ живѣтъ у своего дяди. Солдатъ выскочилъ изъ-за куста. Лучъ солнечный проникаетъ сквозь воду. Этотъ человекъ при смерти. Птица летаетъ подъ облаками. Я положилъ книгу подъ столъ. Садитесь за столъ, и сидите за столомъ. Братъ мой ѣдетъ въ Москву, потому что его жена живѣтъ въ Москвѣ. Орелъ сидитъ на деревѣ. Эта рюмка разбилась на мелкія части. Я досажуюсь на брата моего за его лѣность. Не заботься о чужихъ дѣлахъ. Мой другъ ушибся объ уголъ стола. Вода течетъ съ кровли. Вотъ деревья съ листьями, но безъ цвѣтовъ. Эта собака будетъ съ корову. Дѣти бѣгаютъ по двору и по саду. Мы работали отъ перваго по пятое число Августа. Онъ носитъ трауръ по своему брату.

Мой дядя родился и жилъ въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери. Знаешь Exercises on the conjunctions, p. 188. ли что нашъ учитель нездоровъ? Ежели вы не приѣдете, то я осержусь. Спроси у него, хочетъ ли онъ ѣхать, или намъ рѣшается остаться дома. Онъ заботится болѣе о братѣ нежели о сестрѣ. Приятнѣе дѣлать добро другимъ, чѣмъ самому получать благотворенія. Пусть онъ придетъ; пускай они уѣдутъ. Да солнце васъ не застанетъ на ложѣ. Да здравствуетъ Царь. Чѣмъ прилежниѣ ты будешь учиться, тѣмъ легче будетъ для тебя ученіе.

Зима пріятна. Люди суть смертны. Новгородъ былъ Exercises on the concord of words, p. 192. богатъ. Россія есть обширная имперія. Волга есть царица рѣкъ Русскихъ. Пріятель мой, вы будете довольны. У насъ есть большіе запасы. У меня завтра будутъ деньги. Ея Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхала. Его Превосходительство (*Генералъ*) уѣхалъ. Его Императорское Высочество (*Великій Князь*) былъ доволенъ. Географія и Исторія суть

весьма полезныя знанія. Молчать трудно. Сколько было тамъ дѣтей? Москва знаменита; городъ Москва знаменитъ. Китай многолюденъ; государство Китай многолюдно. У него есть тридцать одна лошадь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень забавна. Вотъ человекъ, чьими трудами пользуемся.

Exercises on  
dependence  
of words.  
p. 200.

Вода есть стихія. Александръ Македонскій былъ великій полководецъ. Татары были свирѣпы. Мои дѣдъ офицеръ; мои дѣдъ былъ тогда офицеромъ. Говорятъ, что кометы были или еще будутъ планетами.

Дождь освяжаетъ землю. Злодѣи ненавидятъ честныхъ людей. Бѣда, опустошившая наши поля, разорила многихъ поселянъ. Говори всегда правду. Мой братъ былъ боленъ всю зиму. Я ѣхалъ цѣлую версту верхомъ. Тебя хвалятъ за прилежаніе. Онъ ударился объ стѣну. Мы сидимъ въ водѣ по шею. Сынъ ростомъ съ отца, и дочь почти съ мать.

Скупецъ предпочитаетъ деньги славу, а воинъ славу деньгамъ. Молнія предшествуетъ грому. Дивлюсь вашему терпѣнію. Нравятся ли вамъ эти картины. Не мсти твоему непріятелю, и дѣлай добро обидѣвшему тебя. Быть чуду. Лѣтись горючимъ слезамъ. Ребенку хочется пить. Сильному человеку не прилично обижать слабаго. Подражаніе Иисусу Христу. Любовь къ добродѣтели и ненависть къ пороку.

Вижу глазами, осязаю руками, слышу ушами, обоняю носомъ, вкушаю языкомъ. Изманилъ былъ взятъ Суворовымъ, и Очаковъ Потемкинымъ. Этихъ офицеровъ все называютъ героями. Большой едва шевелитъ губы (или губами). Гнушаюсь обманомъ и ложью. Здѣсь дышатъ чистымъ воздухомъ. Пожертвованіе жизнью за Государа и отечество. Онъ добръ сердцемъ, но слабъ головою. Утромъ надобно вставать, днемъ работать, вечеромъ отдыхать, и ночью спать. Помни моего друга съ его дядею. Имѣю честь поздравить васъ съ вашими успѣхами.

Сынъ моего искренняго друга вчера уѣхалъ. Дѣти большаго ума нерѣдко бывають хилы. Составленъ списокъ офицерамъ нашей дивизіи. Печеніе хлѣба. Я купилъ фунтъ чаю и сажень дровъ. Столько трудовъ и заботъ пропадо попустому. Русскіе взяли Парижъ осьмнадцатаго Марта тысяча восемьсотъ четырнадцатаго года. Я не емъ хлѣба, но пью воду. Я емъ хлѣбъ, но не пью воды. Я не получалъ ни

письма, ни посылки. Въ этомъ письмѣ нѣтъ ни одной ошибки. Достань мнѣ денегъ. Воины желаютъ битвы и ищутъ славы. Славолібець жаждетъ почестей. Ты хочешь богатства, и бойшься труда. Бочка полна вина. Добрый человекъ чуждъ злобы и зависти. Золото дороже серебра; свинецъ тяжелѣе желѣза. Онъ проситъ милости ради Христа. Отдыхъ пріятенъ послѣ работы. Вдоль этого берега тянется цѣпь горъ. Болки бродятъ около деревни.

Мой братъ хранитъ присутствіе духа при всѣхъ неприятностяхъ въ жизни. Сей городъ построенъ на крутомъ берегу быстрой рѣки. Церковь о пяти главахъ. Онъ плачетъ по своему отцу.

### ВОЛШЕБНИЦА.

Одна вдова имѣла двухъ дочерей: старшая была похожа на свою мать и лицѣмъ и нравомъ, то есть, она была такъ же дурна и такъ же зла, какъ ея мать. Никто не любилъ ихъ; всѣ отъ нихъ бѣжали. Меньшая же была прекрасна и добродушна. Всѣ ея любили. Но злая мать и злая сестра ея ненавидѣли; безпрестанно бранили; одна она должна была работать въ домѣ, топить печь, мести горнищы, стрѣпать въ кухнѣ. Бѣдняжка плакала съ утра до вечера, но не лѣнилась работать; была послушна, терпѣлива, и всё то было напрасно, ибо ничѣмъ не могла угодить на злую мать и на злую сестру свою.

Ежедневно эта бѣдная дѣвушка должна была, съ большимъ кувшиномъ, ходить за водою въ ближнюю рощу, въ которой находился чистый источникъ. Однажды пошла она, по обыкновѣнію, къ этому источнику. День былъ очень жарокъ. Наполнивъ кувшинъ водою, она возвращалась домой. Вдругъ видитъ передъ собою старушку. «Дитя моё!» — сказала ей старушка: — «дай мнѣ напиться. Я устала; мнѣ жарко.» — «Съ охотою, бабушка!» сказала дѣвушка: «вотъ! напейся!» И она подала старушкѣ кувшинъ.

Старушка отъ слабости сѣла на траву, а молодая красавица стала передъ нею на колѣни, и осторожно поддерживала кувшинъ, пока она пила воду. — «Благодарю тебя, милая!»

сказала старушка, напившись: «Вѣжу, что ты доброе, ласковое дитя, и хочу тебя наградить за твою услужливость. Знай же, я волшебница, и нарочно взяла на себя видъ старушки, чтобы тебя испытать. Радуюсь, что ты такая добрая, и вотъ, что я хочу для тебя сдѣлать: всякій разъ, когда ты скажешь слово, изо рта у тебя выпадетъ или прекрасный цвѣтокъ, или драгоценный камень, или большая жемчужина. Прості, дружокъ!» И волшебница исчезла.

Прекрасная дѣвушка возвратилась домой. «Гдѣ ты такъ долго была?» спросила у ней съ сердцемъ мать. — «Что ты такъ долго дѣлала въ рощѣ?» закричала злая сестра. — «Виновата, замѣшкалась!» отвѣчала бѣдняжка, и въ ту самую минуту съ прекрасныхъ губъ ея скатились двѣ розы, двѣ жемчужины и два большіе изумруда. — «Что я вѣжу?» воскликнула удивленная мать. «Это цвѣты! Это драгоценные камни! Что съ тобою сдѣлалось!» — Красавица простоудушно разсказала ей о своей встрѣчѣ съ волшебницею, а между тѣмъ цвѣты, алмазы и жемчугъ такъ и сыпались съ губъ ея. — «Хорошо же!» проворчала мать: «завтра пошлю въ рощу старшую мою дочь, и съ нею то же будетъ.»

И на другое утро, она сказала своей дочери: «Нынче пойдешь за водою ты: возьми кувшинъ; но смотри же, если встрѣтишь у источника старушку, дай ей напиться и приласкайся къ ней хорошенько.» Злая дѣвчонка нахмурилась, съ досадою взяла кувшинъ; нехотя пошла въ рощу, и во всю дорогу ворчала. Старушка сидѣла уже у источника. «Зачерпни мнѣ воды, моя милая!» сказала она дѣвчкѣ: «жарко, хочу напиться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не за тѣмъ пришла сюда, чтобы услуживать старымъ бродягамъ. Напѣшься и безъ меня!» — «Какая же ты грубая!» сказала ей старушка: «Я накажу тебя. Съ этихъ поръ, при каждомъ словѣ твоёмъ, будетъ выпадать у тебя изо рта или змѣя или лягушка.» Она исчезла, а злая дѣвчонка побѣжала домой, разбивши съ досады кувшинъ свой. «Что скажешь, милая дочка!» спросила мать, увидѣвъ еѣ издалека. — «Нечего сказать!» отвѣчала дочь, и вдругъ выскочили изо рта ея двѣ змѣи и двѣ жабы! — «Что я вѣжу! какой страхъ!» закричала мать. «Но во всемъ этомъ виновата твоя сестра! Я дамъ ей знать.» И онѣ бросились бить меньшую дочь.

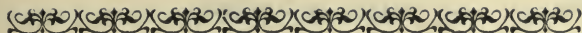


Она, испугавшись угрозы, скрылась въ рощу, долго бѣжала, не смѣя оглянуться, забѣжала далѣко, и наконецъ потеряла дорогу. Но это было къ ея счастію. Царскій сынъ, который тутъ забавлялся охотою, находился въ это время въ рощѣ; онъ увидѣлъ красавицу, которая, сидя на травѣ, горько плакала. — «Что съ тобою сдѣлалось? о чѣмъ ты плачешь, милая?» спросилъ онъ, взявъ ея ласково за руку. — «Богѣ мой! какъ мнѣ не плакать! Матушка выгнала меня изъ дому.» Она говорила, а цвѣты и драгоценные камни сыпались съ ея розовыхъ губъ, и слѣзы обращались въ жемчужины. — «Что это значить?» спросилъ царскій сынъ: «отъ чего эти цвѣты, жемчуги и камни?» Бѣдняжка разсказала царскому сыну о томъ, что съ нею случилось. — Онъ полюбилъ ея, и полюбилъ еще болѣе за то, что она была такъ добра и мила, нежели за ея цвѣты и драгоценные камни. Онъ взялъ ея съ собою, представилъ ея Царю, отцу своему, которому она также понравилась, и Царь позволилъ сыну на ней жениться. Такимъ образомъ она сдѣлалась Царевною, а по смерти Царя, когда ея мужъ взошелъ на отцовскій престолъ, Царицею, и была Царицею доброю. А злая сестра ея? что сдѣлалось съ нею? — Она жалостнымъ образомъ кончила свою жизнь. Мать, которую она безпрестанно сердила и огорчала, принуждена была ея выгнать изъ дому; никто не хотѣлъ ей дать пристанища, и она скрылась въ лѣсъ, гдѣ скоро умерла съ досады и голода.









## TABLE OF CONTENTS

### FIRST PART

#### LEXICOLOGY.

	Page
Division of the Grammar . . . . .	1
Sounds or letters . . . . .	2
Alphabet . . . . .	2
Division of the letters . . . . .	6
Pronunciation of the letters . . . . .	7
Vowels . . . . .	7
Semi-vowels . . . . .	11
Consonants . . . . .	13
Syllables and words . . . . .	17
Tonic accent . . . . .	17
<i>Reading-Exercise</i> . . . . .	18
Elements of speech . . . . .	22
Division of words . . . . .	23
Roots of words . . . . .	24
Inflections of words . . . . .	26
Metaplasm of words . . . . .	26
Permutation of letters . . . . .	26
Epenthesis and prosthesis . . . . .	28
Apocope and Syncope . . . . .	29
THE SUBSTANTIVE . . . . .	29
Division of substantives . . . . .	29
Properties of nouns . . . . .	30

	Page
Genders . . . . .	30
Aspects . . . . .	34
Numbers . . . . .	36
Cases . . . . .	37
Declension of substantives . . . . .	39
Regular substantives . . . . .	39
Rules of the declensions . . . . .	40
General rules . . . . .	41
Special rules . . . . .	42
Paradigms of the declensions of substantives . . . . .	43
First declension . . . . .	43
Second declension . . . . .	48
Third declension . . . . .	50
Irregular nouns . . . . .	54
<i>Exercises in the declension of substantives</i> . . . . .	58
THE ADJECTIVE . . . . .	65
Division of the adjectives . . . . .	65
Qualifying adjectives . . . . .	65
Possessive adjectives . . . . .	65
Properties of adjectives . . . . .	67
Gender, number, case . . . . .	68
Apocope of the termination . . . . .	68
Degrees of signification . . . . .	69
Declension of adjectives . . . . .	75
Paradigms of the declensions of adjectives . . . . .	76
First declension . . . . .	78
Second declension . . . . .	80
Third declension . . . . .	83
<i>Exercises on the adjectives</i> . . . . .	83
THE NUMERALS . . . . .	88
Division of numerals . . . . .	88
Cardinal and ordinal numerals . . . . .	89
Declension of the numerals . . . . .	91
Paradigms of the declension of the numerals . . . . .	92
Special rules of the numerals . . . . .	95
<i>Exercises on the numerals</i> . . . . .	97
THE PRONOUN . . . . .	102
Division of the pronouns . . . . .	102

	Page
Paradigms of the declension of the pronouns . . . . .	104
Declension of the pronouns . . . . .	105
<i>Exercises on the pronouns</i> . . . . .	107
THE VERB . . . . .	112
Division of verbs . . . . .	112
Inflections of the verb . . . . .	113
Tenses . . . . .	113
Aspects . . . . .	113
Moods . . . . .	116
Persons, numbers and genders . . . . .	117
Forms derived from the verb . . . . .	118
Conjugation . . . . .	118
Regular verbs . . . . .	122
Formation of the inflections of the verb . . . . .	123
Paradigms of the conjugations of the regular verbs . . . . .	125
First conjugation . . . . .	128
Second conjugation . . . . .	130
Third conjugation . . . . .	136
Irregular verbs . . . . .	137
Conjugation of irregular verbs . . . . .	138
Delineation of verbs . . . . .	142
Simple verbs . . . . .	143
Prepositional verbs . . . . .	150
<i>Exercises on the verbs</i> . . . . .	166
THE PARTICIPLE . . . . .	173
Division of the participles . . . . .	173
Active and neuter participles . . . . .	173
Passive participles . . . . .	174
Declension of the participles . . . . .	175
Passive verbs . . . . .	176
<i>Exercises on the participles</i> . . . . .	176
THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND . . . . .	178
Division of the adverbs . . . . .	178
Formation of the adverbs . . . . .	179
Degrees of comparison . . . . .	180
Gerunds . . . . .	180
<i>Exercises on the adverbs and the gerunds</i> . . . . .	181
THE PREPOSITION . . . . .	183

	Page
Division of the prepositions . . . . .	183
Government of the prepositions . . . . .	185
<i>Exercises on the prepositions</i> . . . . .	185
THE CONJUNCTION . . . . .	187
<i>Exercises on the conjunctions</i> . . . . .	188
THE INTERJECTION . . . . .	188

## SECOND PART

### SYNTAX.

Division of syntax . . . . .	189
CONCORD OF WORDS . . . . .	189
<i>Exercises on the concord of words</i> . . . . .	192
DEPENDENCE OF WORDS . . . . .	193
Nominative . . . . .	194
Vocative . . . . .	195
Accusative . . . . .	195
Dative . . . . .	196
Instrumental . . . . .	197
Genitive . . . . .	198
Prepositional . . . . .	200
<i>Exercises on the dependence of words</i> . . . . .	200
CONSTRUCTION . . . . .	210

## THIRD PART

### ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS . . . . .	212
Vowels . . . . .	212
Semi-vowels . . . . .	215
Consonants . . . . .	215
Doubling of consonants . . . . .	218
Capital letters . . . . .	219
DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES . . . . .	219
ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS . . . . .	220
Russian words . . . . .	220
Foreign words . . . . .	223
ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS . . . . .	226
MARKS OF PUNCTUATION . . . . .	227



## FOURTH PART

## PROSODY.

	Page
Division of prosody . . . . .	229
ORTHOEPY . . . . .	229
Prosodical or tonic accent . . . . .	229
Place of the accent . . . . .	230
VERSIFICATION . . . . .	231
Tonic versification . . . . .	231
Foot or metre . . . . .	231
Denomination of the verses . . . . .	232
Cæsura . . . . .	237
Termination of the verses . . . . .	238
Rhyme . . . . .	239
Stanza or strophe . . . . .	239
Poetic licenses . . . . .	240
SOLUTION OF THE EXERCISES . . . . .	241



LEIPZIG.—PRINTED BY W. DRUGULIN.



14 DAY USE  
RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED  
**LOAN DEPT.**

This book is due on the last date stamped below,  
or on the date to which renewed. Renewals only:  
Tel. No. 642-3405  
Renewals may be made 4 days prior to date due.  
Renewed books are subject to immediate recall.

FEB 24 1972 97

REC'D LD FEB 11 72 -10 PM • 7

MAR 5 1972 35

REC'D LD MAR 7 1972 12 35 PM 1 72

LD21A-40m-8,'71  
(P6572s10)476-A-32

General Library  
University of California  
Berkeley

U. C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C047752196



